

现代
怪闻

天衣金仙

[胡吟霖展]
作品

2013年联袂仙侠频道最新力作

修仙者携宝重生都市，化龙归正！

Genius Sword Immortal

Chapters 001 - 050

by: Feng Yin Zi Chen

Table of Contents

[Chapter 001 – Urban Rebirth](#)

[Chapter 002 – Half Brick](#)

[Chapter 003 – Warning](#)

[Chapter 004 – Dragon Sword Ancient Ring](#)

[Chapter 005 – Conflict At The School Gate](#)

[Chapter 006 – Best Friend Ouge](#)

[Chapter 007 – Oval Faced Maiden](#)

[Chapter 008 – Timely Help](#)

[Chapter 009 – Serious Crime](#)

[Chapter 010 – High Ranked Officer Pressured](#)

[Chapter 011 – Weiming Lake](#)

[Chapter 012 – Rumor Spreads Everywhere](#)

[Chapter 013 – Tail Incident](#)

[Chapter 014 – Su Menghan's Request](#)

[Chapter 015 – Brother Tie Admires You](#)

[Chapter 016 - Lin Clan's Sanshao](#)

[Chapter 017 - Spirit Stone](#)

[Chapter 018 - Triple Compensation](#)

[Chapter 019 - I Curse You That You Never Get A Wife](#)

[Chapter 020 - Sword](#)

[Chapter 021 - Ye Feng Attacks](#)

[Chapter 022 - Invisible Kill](#)

[Chapter 023 - Brother Tie's Tragedy](#)

[Chapter 024 - Let's Go To The School Together](#)

[Chapter 025 - Goes To Langfang](#)

[Chapter 026 - Moron Cousin](#)

[Chapter 027 - Trying To Stop Injustice](#)

[Chapter 028 - Listen To My Woman](#)

[Chapter 029 - You Want To Blackmail Me?](#)

[Chapter 030 - Long Wan'er](#)

[Chapter 031 - Swift And Fierce Sword](#)

[Chapter 032 - Pursuit](#)

[Chapter 033 - Win An Inch, Want A Foot](#)

[Chapter 034 - Jealousy](#)

[Chapter 035 - School Beauty's Mind](#)

[Chapter 036 - Ye Clan In The Past](#)

[Chapter 037 - Crafty Old Man](#)

[Chapter 038 - Youth In Western-Style Suit](#)

[Chapter 039 - Elder Brother Ye And Ms. Ye](#)

[Chapter 040 - Mysterious Organization And Cai Shao](#)

[Chapter 041 - She Is Jealous](#)

[Chapter 042 - Su Xinchang's Choice](#)

[Chapter 043 - Live In A Room?](#)

[Chapter 044 - Gently](#)

[Chapter 045 - Back View Of Beautiful Female Master](#)

[Chapter 046 - Su Xinchang's Invitation](#)

[Chapter 047 - Extreme Drinking Capacity?](#)

[Chapter 048 - Angry Su Menghan](#)

[Chapter 049 - Xie Clan's People Arrive](#)

Chapter 050 - The Wrath Of Scarred Face Man

Chapter 001 – Urban Rebirth

“Ah – someone’s peeping!”

Under the night sky of a city, within a certain villa district, a loud panic-stricken and angry voice resounded. Then, suddenly, the sound of a heavy object falling on the ground echoed.

“Damn, it hurts

It seemed as if someone had fallen from a high altitude, and Ye Feng stood up unsteadily, swaying from one side to the other.

“No! Master has been captured by the monster, I must hurry Hey, where is this place?”

When he opened his eyes, he actually discovered that he was no longer present in front of the Fire Dragon Cave, but a completely unknown and strange place.

There was a villa on his front and when he turned back, he saw yet another villa behind him. The whole area was illuminated with city lights and he could clearly see a bustling metropolis under the night sky.

“How did this happen, I was undoubtedly in front of.....”

Ye Feng was totally bewildered.

He distinctly remembered that he was chasing the trail of a monster, and had entered the Fire Dragon Cave, but accidentally stepped on a mechanism, and the very next instant, he was falling down and when he landed on the ground, he found himself in a metropolis!

In his memories, a city like this didn't exist in the 'World of the immortals'.

He stood up, but right at that moment, a series of memories, which did not belong to him, flooded into his mind causing a severe headache. This headache was unbearable and he could not help but shake his head to get rid of this sudden headache.

“This guy is also called Ye Feng? He didn't have the keys and wanted to reach the second floor of his villa, so he had tried to climb by crawling up the water pipe? But, after climbing halfway, he startled when heard a loud scream of a girl and fell to his death?”

Ye Feng almost cursed out loud at this ridiculous incident, present in the memories that he had just got after the severe headache.

From the memories, Ye Feng found out that 'Ye Feng' of this world had left home and gone out in the evening to play online games, but unbelievably, the body of 'Ye Feng' had been possessed by him when 'Ye Feng' had fallen to his death. (NT: 'Ye Feng' is the guy of modern world and Ye Feng is the MC who has come from 'the world of the immortals')

“Hold on!”

Ye Feng's complexion changed when he recalled the memory of the snow white and creamy smooth body of a girl that had come into the sight of this guy when he had climbed up the water pipe and had accidentally seen the naked body of that girl taking bath.

He was a smart person and quickly realized that he would soon be in danger!

There were two villas adjacent to each other. 'Ye Feng' lived alone in one of these villas and it belonged to his grandpa. And in the other villa, lived a beautiful girl who was also considered the Xiaohua of his high school. Both of them were neighbors, but they never talked much. (NT: Author has used 'Xiaohua' frequently in this chapter which means 'the prettiest girl in the school')

“Ye Feng, you're so dead!”

At that moment, an anger-filled, sweet and pleasant voice of a girl resounded in his ears.

Ye Feng shivered and looked back and saw a beautiful girl, clad in white dress, and she looked exactly the same in his new memories that he had got after coming to this world. However, right now, she was holding a fruit knife in her tender hand and with a haze of anger on her face, she menacingly rushed towards Ye Feng through the small alley, located between the two villas.

“Run!”

Ye Feng instantly understood that this beauty was a serious threat to him because if he got stabbed by that knife, then he would most likely die!

If Ye Feng possessed his previous strength then he would certainly not be afraid of a little girl. But right now, he possessed the body of this world's 'Ye Feng', and that guy's body was feeble and lacked strength.

Ye Feng immediately decided to escape from this so-called Xiaohua, who was chasing after him with a knife in her hand. Ye Feng felt that he needed to practice as soon as possible and gain the ability to protect himself in this new world. Only then, he would be able to investigate why he had suddenly appeared in this damned place.

He started to run, guided by the memories of 'Ye Feng', and since it would be impossible to hide in the interiors of the villa district, he ran straight towards the gate.

At this time, it seemed as if the big beautiful eyes of this school beauty were spraying fire, and she kept on pursuing after him.

She had entered the bathroom and prepared hot water to have a comfortable bath, but just when she had taken off her clothes, revealing her creamy jade like skin, she looked outside the window and actually saw a figure climbing up the wall of the adjacent villa.

This stinky neighbor had just now tried to shamelessly peep on her?

He actually dared to peep on a girl taking bath!

Too shameless!

She had panicked and did not notice that her scream had scared that boy so much, that he lost his grip on the pipe and fell down on the ground. However, how could she forget that her naked body had already been seen?

She had become furious and had finally decided that she must catch this peeper and turn him over to the cops!

“Stop, don’t run!”

That Xiaohua was in a constant pursuit of Ye Feng holding a fruit knife in her hand, and it did not take long for them to run out of the gate of villa district.

In the security room, a young security guard saw a young boy running out of the gate and a young girl chasing after him, but he did not care, and thought that this might have been the result of couple’s argument and continued to watch television.

“This body is really weak and runs quite slow..... However I must escape, and who can win against me in a race?”

Ye Feng was soon out of breath, but in the world of the immortals, he was known as the ‘famous escape master’, who had once survived after being chased down by numerous strong masters.

If he was to get caught by a little girl and the word about it spread out, then won't he become a laughingstock?

He ran past many streets and soon arrived at a bustling place. In his memories, this place was called Bar Street and he had decided to come to this place because it was stuffed with various kinds of people and it would be quite easy to blend in the crowd to hide from that Xiaohua.

He looked back and saw he had left her far behind, but she was still chasing after him and this time, she was hiding the knife from the eyes of the people.

“Listen, I climbed up because I didn't have the keys and i was just trying to open the door. It was not my intention to peep, so why are you behaving so violently over a misunderstanding? However..... This little girl is really in a good shape, and her snow white figure is quite exquisite

Ye Feng started to think about her exquisite figure and admired it, but he quickly shook his head because now was not the time to have such thoughts.

Ye Feng rushed towards the Bar Street, and quickly disappeared in the crowd.

Su Menghan had chased all the way after Ye Feng, but when she saw him running towards the Bar street, she hesitated to proceed. She had heard bad rumors about this place, that it was definitely not an appropriate place for a pretty girl walking all alone. (NT: Here, author

has used her name for the first time. But MC prefers to call her Xiaohua, which also means a ‘school beauty’)

However, just the thought of her whole body being looked at by this stinky brat had made her even more furious.

“Today, I will definitely catch you!”

She gritted her teeth and ran after him into the Bar street.

When a beautiful girl like her entered the Bar Street, her presence immediately attracted the attention of many people with their gazes filled with desire, greed and lust.

Su Menghan was a little scared, but was bold enough to keep on searching for that hateful figure in the crowd.

After about half an hour, Ye Feng had finally arrived in the central area of Bar Street.

When he was sure that Su Menghan was no longer following him, he was relieved.

“She is such a violent woman, just like my master.”

Ye Feng was walking on the Street, and at the same time, he looked at the scene of debauchery in the colorful Bars, located on both sides of the Street. He had never seen such a scene in his world of the immortals.

He tried to find a quiet place where he could begin his practice, but finding a quiet place in the Bar street was certainly impossible, and quickly understood that his only option was to get out of there.

As he was about to go elsewhere to start practicing, suddenly, he heard desperate cries of a female coming from an alley.

“Help

Ye Feng heard faint cries of a girl and the origin of this voice was definitely close to him, otherwise, he certainly would not have heard those cries in a noisy place like the Bar Street.

“Isn’t this the voice of that Xiaohua?”

When Ye Feng heard this voice and confirmed that these cries belonged to that Xiaohua, he felt somewhat strange, because he did not expect that the so-called Xiaohua would continue to chase after him and enter the Bar Street. She had entered the Bar Street and seemed to have encountered a dangerous situation.

Although, he did not want to interfere, but then he realized that this little girl had chased after him all the way to this place, which was definitely dangerous and scary for a young and pretty girl like her. And if anything bad happened to her, then he would not be able to forgive

himself!

Ye Feng slightly hesitated then finally entered the alley and prepared to take a look at what was actually going on.

Chapter 002 – Half Brick

Ye Feng ran into the small alley and soon saw a figure running out from there, who seemed to have lost his mind out of fear. (NT: to lose one's mind out of fear (idiom))

“Tian Youliang?”

When Ye Feng clearly saw the appearance of this guy, he found information about him in the memories of his counterpart from this world.

Tian Youliang was a dandy guy and a student in his high school class, and he belonged to a considerably rich family. He would pester Su Menghan all day and not just because she was beautiful, but also because her family was filthy rich. She belonged to a multimillionaire family that owned assets throughout the Yanjing city. (NT: ‘Yanjing’ used to be the old name for Beijing)

Bleached hair and a black leather jacket gave Tian Youliang an appearance of a school punk, but right now, he looked confused with a sign of panic in his eyes.

“Ye Feng?”

Tian Youliang was frantically trying to escape but when he lifted up his head, he was somewhat startled to see Ye Feng there.

Tian Youliang had seen his goddess Su Menghan at the Bar Street, and had helped her in searching for Ye Feng for half an hour but they still couldn't find him, but he did not expect to actually meet Ye Feng here.

Unfortunately, now, Su Menghan had been surrounded by the guys from the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang' and things were going to get very ominous for her.

If it was an ordinary small fry, then Tian Youliang could have tried to help her. But, even his father would not dare to provoke the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang', then how could a mere school kid like him try to save her from their clutches. It was a common saying in that locality that those who dared to annoy 'Heavenly Serpent Gang' would have a very miserable fate!

Just the thought of his goddess getting defiled by four drunkards in front of his eyes had left Tian Youliang in a bad mood, however to him, his own life was obviously more important than that of Su Menghan.

Tian Youliang was not in a mood to pay attention to Ye Feng, because he was afraid that those drunkards might rush out of the alley and come after him. After he saw Ye Feng face-to-face, Tian Youliang immediately ran out of the alley and soon disappeared.

“It seems quite dangerous

Ye Feng looked at the back of the guy, fleeing with all his might. He thought deeply for a moment, and then picked up a half brick which was lying quietly on the ground. Since, he had not practiced in this new body so his strength was extremely low and could not take rash decisions.

Without making any sound, he crept around the corner to come inside the alley and slowly stuck his head out to look. He secretly chuckled to himself after seeing the scene inside that alley.

He saw four drunken tall brawny guys, with a white snake painted on their cuffs, which was definitely the symbol of ‘Heavenly Serpent Gang’.

They had completely surrounded and trapped that Xiaohua, Su Menghan, inside the small alley and were about to commit atrocities.
(NT: Xiaohua = School beauty)

Ye Feng had chuckled because all of the four brawny guys had their backs towards him!

“Hey, grandsons!”

Ye Feng roared and ran forward, then threw the brick in his hand skillfully, with all of his might.

Su Menghan was crying.

She now regretted her decision of chasing that stinky brat all the way to the Bar Street, and now hated him even more for leading her to this damned place.

When she had first entered the Bar Street, she met Tian Youliang who often pestered her in the class. Tian Youliang said that he was familiar with the Bar Street area and could help her in finding Ye Feng, but near this small alley, they bumped into four drunkards of the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang'. When they saw her beautiful appearance, they could not control themselves and decided to trap her in the ally and have some fun with her.

When Tian Youliang saw those four brawny guys, he got scared to the point of wetting himself. He abandoned her and immediately escaped like a scaredy-cat.

By this time, the four tall and burly drunk men, who looked as if they had smoked up all day, had surrounded her in this small alley with an evil look in their evil eyes, looking at her as if they were going to strip her down with just their looks.

Desperate Su Menghan had to shout for "help", but in such a small remote alley of the infamous Bar Street, no matter how much she shouted for help, who would come to her rescue?

She had tightly gripped that fruit knife which was hidden in her skirt, and had already prepared herself to struggle hard against those four drunkards, when suddenly, a familiar voice spread over from the corner.

"Hey, grandsons!"

A loud outburst of this provocative phrase immediately attracted the attention of the four drunkards.

“Where did you come from you spoiled piece of shit, I, your father, will immediately prepare your funeral

One of the foul-mouthed drunkards turned back but couldn't react when he saw a brick flying towards him and the very next instant, it heavily smashed into his face.

It was the half brick!

This direct hit from a brick had caused the blood to gush out of his face. He couldn't bear the extreme pain and immediately fell down while screaming incessantly.

Although, Ye Feng was not strong at the moment, but he had once cultivated to become an immortal, so his grasp on control and angle of a projectile weapon was absolutely impossible to achieve for ordinary people. For others, they couldn't have hit a person from that far, let alone with such accuracy to hit the face with enough force to cause the blood to gush out.

The other three drunkards were stunned, and even Su Menghan was totally stunned.

“Don't you want to run?”

Ye Feng did not hesitate to take advantage of the fact that those stupid men were drunk, and he quickly held Su Menghan's hand and ran outside the small alley.

If these people were not drunk, but sober, then let alone saving her, he certainly couldn't guarantee his own safety in this situation. Fortunately, they were totally wasted at the moment so their thinking capacity had decreased considerably and that had caused the delay in their reactions. Before they could react and take some actions, Ye Feng had already pulled Su Menghan and ran more than ten meters away.

One of them finally reacted and started examining the face-injury of that foul-mouthed guy and the other two started to pursue them: "Brat, I, your father, will definitely catch you!"

"If I was chasing after someone then I won't waste time on useless talks."

There was a disdain in Ye Feng's smile and while pulling Su Menghan by her hand, they turned several curves and soon returned to the Bar Street main road.

When Su Menghan saw the street full of people, she was immediately moved to tears, but unfortunately, the two drunkards had already caught up with them, and their desperate escape started yet again on the main road.

"You're running too slowly."

Ye Feng frowned and put his hand around her waist to pick her up. Her soft and fragrant body was very light like a flower. Ye Feng embraced her tightly and rushed forward, but not only did his speed not decrease, he had actually gotten a bit faster, and the distance between them and the drunkards also widened considerably.

The people on the Bar street raised their eyebrows in succession. What was going on?

“Grandma Xiong, that boy runs really fast.”

After seeing that Ye Feng, while embracing Su Menghan, was running too fast and had already left them far behind, both drunkards had to finally give up on their chase. One of them spat on the ground and said: “Forget it, elder brother Ba Tie will kill them for us, that brat’s fate is sealed.”

With the help of Heavenly Serpent Gang’s influence, finding the identities of Ye Feng and Su Menghan would be quite easy for them.

“Put me down!”

He ran out of the Bar Street, and after seeing that the danger was gone, Su Menghan started struggling in his embrace.

The feeling of being carried at a lightning speed had left some aftertaste. Since her childhood, she had never allowed other males to touch her, except her dad. However, today, she did not expect that not only would her naked body be seen by Ye Feng, but he would also conveniently embrace her all the time during their escape, which made her even more angry.

When Ye Feng heard her, he loosened his arms all of a sudden.

“Ah!”

Su Menghan suddenly fell on the road, and shouted with the pain and cursed in her heart. How did this guy have such a demeanor?

She stared bitterly at Ye Feng and held the street lamp post to slowly stand up.

In the night, under the dim light of street light, her graceful fragrant body, under her snow white dress, appeared incomparably attractive that perfectly complemented her oval face and her delicate features. She indeed was worthy of the title of Xiaohua of his school.

Ye Feng looked at her and could not help but recall the feeling of holding her in his embrace. That creamy soft, full breasts and fully stretch..... He could not help but think of his master, who was the same peerless beautiful woman who was called the ‘Cold Ice Fairy’ in the world of the immortals.

“Master, she was captured by the monsters

Ye Feng once again thought of this matter, but now he was in a different world and could not do anything. In fact, his master’s cultivation was ten times better than his own and even if he was still in the Fire Dragon Cave, he would not be able to do much for her.

He wanted to quickly find a place to practice, in order to find a way to

go back soon.

He started walking when suddenly, he heard Su Menghan's angry voice from behind: "Wait a minute!"

Chapter 003 – Warning

When Su Menghan called out to stop him, Ye Feng turned his head and asked: “Why?”

“Take me home.”

Su Menghan glared at him and thought that this guy was really stupid. First, he saved her, then he threw her down on the road and now he was leaving her alone like this in the night.

“I don’t have time for that.”

Ye Feng refused.

“You!”

Su Menghan couldn’t believe her ears. How could this guy be so stupid? He had no time? Both of their villas were located next to each other then how could taking her home be a waste time for him?

“Take me home, or I’ll tell my dad.”

She again said the same words, however, with one more sentence added at the back.

Ye Feng did not want to get involved with her, but when he heard the newly added sentence, he abruptly stopped. In his new memories, Su Menghan's father was definitely not an affable person and had never been nice to 'Ye Feng' of this world.

If her dad found out that tonight, Ye Feng had dared to peep at his daughter while she was taking bath.....

Ye Feng broke out in cold sweat, because at his current strength, would he not be easily killed by the opposite side?

"I was a bit hard on you, but try to walk faster."

Ye Feng had to compromise and he caved in, but he was incomparably aggrieved because this was his first time submitting to someone other than his master and that too before a little girl!

However, he didn't have a choice other than surrendering to her, because he no longer possessed the hard-earned cultivation that he had achieved in the world of the immortals.

Su Menghan looked at his aggrieved appearance and secretly rejoiced in her heart, but in the next moment, she was in a bad mood. If other people would get an opportunity to take her home at night like this, then they would certainly be ecstatic and cheerful, however, this Ye Feng had an expression of reluctance on his face?

"Today's events, you are not allowed to tell anyone."

While both of them were walking back home, Su Menghan said to Ye Feng. If her father found out that she went to a sketchy place like the Bar Street at night, then won't he break her leg?

“Oh.”

Ye Feng nodded absentmindedly, because right now, he was busy thinking deeply about his practice plan.

Su Menghan looked at his absentminded appearance and noticed that he was not even paying attention to her. This made her feel even more uncomfortable and unhappy in her heart, but then, she recalled how Ye Feng had come to her rescue and how he had shouted “grandsons” in the alley, followed by that piece of flying brick, making her feel a little touched.

Although this bumpkin was only good at playing online games, moreover, he had also dared to shamelessly peep at her, but speaking the truth, he still seemed a lot more pleasing to the eye compared to that ‘gong zi’ Tian Youliang and was definitely very reliable in the face of danger. (NT: ‘gong zi’ is an honorific for ‘son of an official’)

They continued to walk and were about to reach the ‘Qingfeng park’ when a midnight blue BMW 7, deluxe model, Limousine suddenly stopped next to them.

Seeing this car, Su Menghan immediately gawked. Was it not her father's car?

Ye Feng saw a rather dignified middle-aged man sitting on the front passenger seat and this man was looking at him and Su Menghan with eyes full of anger.

Ye Feng immediately felt that something was wrong.

In his memories, Su Menghan's father was always busy with business and would always be out on business trips and seldom returned to the 'Qingfeng Park'. In the Su family's villa, located in the Qingfeng Park, most of the time, only a maid would be present to accompany Su Menghan in the night.

Ye Feng did not expect that her father would actually come back tonight.....

"Get inside the car."

The middle-aged man rolled down the window and looked sternly at Su Menghan.

.....

Su Menghan opened the back door and looked once at Ye Feng before getting inside. She could not help but be somewhat worried for him.

Ye Feng, although, also lived in a villa located in the Qingfeng Park, where the value of each of the villas was in millions, but he had always lived alone in his villa. Su Menghan's father, Su Xinchang, had already investigated him and knew that Ye Feng didn't have a father or a mother,

he had no social relations and the villa where he lived actually belonged to his grandfather.

Su Xinchang had never seen Ye Feng's grandfather. Even after so many years, he had never made an appearance, so he would definitely not be any special character. The most important thing was that, owning a villa in Qingfeng Park was not something incredible in the eyes of Su Xinchang.

Therefore, Su Xinchang had never allowed Ye Feng to have contact with his daughter.

However, today, he had seen Ye Feng and his daughter walking together on the road and that too this late in the night! Damn it, was this brat trying to hit on his daughter?

Su Xinchang had become extremely furious.

How could he tolerate seeing his precious daughter together with such a poor boy? It was time to give a good warning to this brat and then move Su Menghan from the Qingfeng Park to somewhere else.

Of course, for a big personality like him, it was a disgrace to come forward and personally talk to Ye Feng. He would leave this matter to be managed by his assistant-driver. (NT: The person he is referring to holds both the positions of his assistant and driver)

The Limousine sped up and soon went into the Qingfeng Park's parking lot.

Ye Feng had seen a look of disdain in the eyes of Su Xinchang, but he simply did not care. He was cultivating in order to become an immortal, so why would he bother about such an ordinary person?

Now that Su Menghan was not around anymore, Ye Feng relaxed a bit and quickly ran towards the Qingfeng Park.

In accordance with the previous Ye Feng's consistent practice, he continued to climb up the water pipe along the wall. Of course, his movements would be more flexible and swift than the previous Ye Feng, and in a very short amount of time, he had already reached the second floor and from the balcony window, he jumped inside to go in. (NT: He didn't have the keys so his only option was to follow previous Ye Feng's trick of climbing up the water pipe)

At this time, Su Menghan did not want to be scolded by her father so once she entered the villa; she immediately rushed towards her room to hide in the bathroom.

When she entered the bathroom and looked out of the window, she saw Ye Feng crawling up the water pipe and then going inside the villa. After looking at this scene, she could not help but cover her mouth with a hand.

“So he really was just trying to enter the villa and was not peeping.....”

At this time, she finally understood the original misunderstanding and realized her fault. She had forgotten to draw the curtains and because of that, her whole naked body had been seen by Ye Feng. When she recalled

that scene just now, her delicate face turned red all of a sudden.

“It’s so far away, he should not be able to see anything right?”

Though she felt unlikely, but could only console herself.

Recalling the scene from the Bar Street, where Ye Feng had suddenly appeared in front of her eyes at the critical moment, had just now made her heart to pound a little. She quickly pulled the curtain and turned on the water to re-take a bath.

And downstairs, Su Xinchang was sitting on the sofa, wearing an elaborate western-styled suit, which made him look matured and decent. His whole personality revealed a high-ranking temperament of the Chairman of Su Sheng Group, who owned innumerable resources.

His beautiful woman assistant-driver was sitting opposite to him on the sofa. She looked matured and intellectual, wearing an OL dress and black-rimmed eyeglasses. Her long hair was trailing over her shoulders, and her pitch-black short skirt in coordination with the skin-colored stockings was making her look very tempting. (NT: The term ‘OL dress’ stands for ‘Office Lady Dress’)

“Take this two hundred thousand and go warn that kid to make him stop dreaming of something he cannot achieve in this lifetime.”

Su Xinchang signed a check and handed it over to the beautiful woman assistant.

“Yes, Director Su.”

The beautiful female assistant took the check and turned her small waist to leave the villa and walked towards the neighboring villa to give a warning to Ye Feng.

Su Xinchang was sitting on the sofa, watching her seductive backside, but the anger in his heart had still not disappeared. Later, he must teach a good lesson to Su Menghan otherwise she might get out of his hands.

.....

Ye Feng entered his room from the second floor's balcony and guided by his memories, he turned on the lights inside the villa.

To be able to live in such a luxurious double-storied villa was very enviable, but ‘Ye Feng’ of this world had his own difficulties. In this villa, he could only go to three places; the hall, his bedroom and the bathroom.

If he ran wildly all over the place then his damn grandfather would stop sending the living expenses to him.

So, ‘Ye Feng’ indeed was a poor chap.

He was about to start practicing when he heard someone ringing the doorbell. Ye Feng had some doubts about who would come this late in the night?

He ran up to open the door and saw a bespectacled intellectual-looking royal elder sister standing in the doorway and immediately recognized her. Was she not the beautiful driver of Su Xinchang?

Chapter 004 – Dragon Sword Ancient Ring

Ye Feng saw a tall and beautiful woman standing outside the door, but he did not get out and did not allow her to enter as well. He just stopped her at the door and said: “Girl, why have you come to visit so late at night?”

Assistant Hu Meimei was a bit annoyed at this attitude of Ye Feng. How could he make a beauty like her to stand outside the door and did not even ask her why she had come to him? He actually stopped her at the door and did not even allow her to enter the villa, how outrageous!

Moreover, it was very strange that he called her “girl”. Just in what era was he living that he actually addressed her in such an odd way? No wonder, Director Su Xinchang had an unfavorable impression for this boy, as he was certainly a big bumpkin.

“Director Sue has asked me to bring you a word.”

Hu Meimei glanced at him and when she saw his filthy appearance, a look of disdain appeared in her eyes: “Miss Su is not worthy of people like you, afterwards, do not try to get close to her. Director Su has sent this for you, do you accept it?”

She handed over the check.

Ye Feng took a look at it and was suddenly surprised to see two hundred thousand written on it. Did it even seem like Su Xinchang

actually hated him? Why would Director Su give this money to him? After giving it a thought, he figured out that it was a “transaction fee” from the other side to make him leave Su Menghan.

But the problem was that there was really no relationship between him and Su Menghan, then why would the other party give money in vain?

Ye Feng really didn’t hesitate to take the check and then with a “bang”, he closed the door and didn’t even give a glance at the beautiful assistant.

Right now, to Ye Feng, this two hundred thousand was really a timely help. No matter where one would want to practice, whether in the world of immortal or in this mortal world, one would still need adequate resources.

Without any cause or reason, he was getting two hundred thousand, so why must he not take it!

Next, he would take a bath first then look into the matters of cultivation.

.....

When Ye Feng slammed the door, Hu Meimei’s complexion suddenly became very unsightly.

As the beautiful assistant of Su Sheng group’s director, Su Xinchang, she was very much used to getting all kinds of flattery from others, but

what just happened right now? This young hick had actually disrespectfully shut the door on her face.....

She grew more and more unhappy and returned back to Su Xinchang but seemed to be in a very bad mood.

“How did it go?”

When Su Xinchang saw an irritated look on her face, he asked in an indifferent tone.

“Director Su, he took it.”

Hu Meimei diligently reported.

“That’s good.”

Su Xinchang nodded: “Go upstairs and take a look at that girl, why hasn’t she come down yet.”

“There’s no need for that, I have come down.”

A melodious voice of a girl came over from the staircase. It was Su Menghan who had just come down after taking a bath. When she was coming down the staircase, at that moment, she distinctly heard Hu Meimei’s phrase “he took it,” and all of a sudden, she felt a little agitated.

“Oh? Good.”

Su Xinchang turned his head and looked at his budding flower-like beautiful daughter who had just taken bath and motioned her to sit down on the sofa opposite to him, then said: “Meimei just now went to talk to that Ye Feng and between you and two hundred thousand, he chose two hundred thousand..... “

“How many times do I need to tell you that I don’t have any relationship with him!”

Su Menghan was very uncomfortable sitting on the sofa. She thought that her dad was really a fool that he actually gave money to someone for no reason.

But in her heart, she was unable to determine why she was feeling so uncomfortable at the moment.

She had yet to realize that Ye Feng had already made an important place for himself in her heart. When she just heard that Ye Feng had actually chosen money over her, the favorable impression for him inside her heart disappeared all of a sudden.

“Tomorrow, we will move to our villa in Yanxi Villa district, let Meimei pick you up.”

Su Xinchang said in a tone that could not be refused.

Yanxi Villa district was Yanjing city’s new district for luxury villas with

their living standards a lot higher than the villas in Qingfeng Park, but the distance between Yanxi Villa district and Su Menghan's High school was a bit too far.

“What?”

Su Menghan suddenly stood up and stared at her dad with her big beautiful eyes: “I’m not going.”

“It’s not up to you to decide.”

Su Xinchang sternly said.

Su Menghan was reluctant, but couldn’t do anything. Just because her dad had seen her roaming outside, late at night, he was making her move to a place that she did not like?

Unconsciously, Su Menghan had become even more annoyed at Ye Feng.

.....

Ye Feng certainly did not know about Su Menghan’s disgust for him, and even if knew, he simply wouldn’t care.

As for the 200,000 he had gotten his hands on, he again didn’t care.

It was not that he did not know the value of two hundred thousand, but to him, this was barely enough to meet the basic requirements of practicing and nothing more than that.

In this whole world, the only thing that could make him feel excited was the ring he was wearing in his hand.

When he was in the hidden treasure trove of Fire Dragon Cave, he had stumbled upon this magic ring and at that time, this ring looked to be entirely made up of stone, but now, he actually saw two words written on the ancient ring “Dragon Sword”.

For the sake of this Dragon sword ancient ring, he had accidentally stepped on a trap mechanism which had caused him to fall all the way into this modern metropolis.

“Dragon Sword ancient ring, so it was not just a legend after all.....”

Seeing the ring in his hand, Ye Feng was incomparably happy and ecstatic and this joy was much more than the joy of getting two hundred thousand. Let alone two hundred thousand, even two billion could not buy this ring!

Using this legendary Dragon sword ancient ring, one could open the ‘Dragon sword ancient tomb’ and get ancient immortal tools, but right now, forget about the Dragon sword ancient tomb, Ye Feng could not even go back to the world of the Immortals.

“This world’s air is polluted and I don’t think there are enough

heavenly treasures left to help me with my practice.....”

Ye Feng shook his head and did not think about it too much.

He did not know whether this Dragon sword ancient ring had any other functions, but clearly, now was not the time to study about its functions.

In the world of the Immortals, he had cultivated in order to become an immortal and it totally depended on the time spent on cultivation. Under normal circumstances, the longer the cultivation time was, the stronger the cultivator would become. So if someone possessed the cultivation of a decade, then he would obviously be much stronger than those with a cultivation of five years.

Before coming here, Ye Feng had cultivated for 10 years in order to become an immortal, but after coming to this metropolis, he had completely lost his hard-earned cultivation in an instant.

He wanted to improve his cultivation as fast as possible in order to become an immortal and for that, he needed to practice a cultivation method so that his cultivation would keep on increasing steadily. There were a lot of ways to increase the speed of cultivation, like by consuming some of the heavenly treasure medicinal pills, or relying on other fortuitous encounters. If his luck went against the heaven's will, then even if he were to practice only for a year, he could obtain ten years worth of cultivation.

In order to become an immortal, the cultivation of a decade was like a watershed.

‘Decade cloud god’ and ‘Century sun god’ were the most popular cultivation laws in the world of the Immortals.

Ye Feng recalled the cultivation law that he had practiced in the world of the Immortals – Revolving star tomb tactics. This was the most basic cultivation method for growing one’s cultivation day after day.

He had heard that some advanced core laws could increase the practice speed by ten times, but unfortunately, Ye Feng could not obtain such an advanced core law in this metropolis.

After taking a bath, Ye Feng returned to his room and tried to practice ‘star tomb tactic’, but suddenly, his complexion changed.

Because he found out that his body was actually unable to practice!

No, not just him, but everyone in this world was unable to practice! And the reason was very simple.....

Chapter 005 – Conflict At The School Gate

All of the people in the World of the Immortals contained ‘Core Dan’ in their Dantian which and its main function was to generate and control the systemic circulation of Zhen Qi throughout the body. (NT: ‘Dan’ means ‘Pellet’)

However the people on the Earth did not have ‘Core Dan’ in their Dantian. As a result, they couldn’t even produce Zhen Qi then how could they possibly practice?

Ye Feng scowled and didn’t know what to do, when suddenly the ‘Dragon sword ancient ring’ on his right hand shone up and a trace of mysterious stream of air entered into his body.

“This is.....forming a Core Dan?”

Ye Feng was ecstatic and overjoyed.

Dragon Sword ancient ring actually had such a function which directly opposed the heaven’s will. This really was a pleasant surprise to him especially because now it was possible for him to practice in this world. However, didn’t this also indicate that in this world, he would be the only one who could practice?

He did not believe that others on Earth would also possess magic artifacts like ‘Dragon sword ancient ring’, that directly opposed the will of heavens. Even in the ‘Cultivation World of the Immortals’, among the

many magic artifacts, it was considered a top notch and could lead to an all out war among the forces. (NT: Ye Feng's world is called 'Cultivation World of the Immortals' but I will just use 'World of the Immortal' to avoid any confusion)

Thus, as long as he was careful, he would certainly be safe here, and without worrying about anything, he would be able to fully concentrate on finding a way back to the World of the Immortals.

Thanks to the miraculous function of 'Dragon sword ancient ring', a soybean-sized 'Core Dan' had quickly formed in his Dantian and he had finally calmed down, because now, he could actually begin to cultivate by practicing 'Star tomb tactics'.

When he was in the World of the Immortals, he had practiced 'Star tomb tactics' for eight years and was very much familiar with it. He used his thoughts to move the faint trace of Zhen Qi in his Dantian along the fixed passages of meridians, circulating it randomly up and down in the whole body.

He forced the circulation of Zhen Qi in his meridians which was slow in the beginning but it gradually began to get faster.

Soon, all of the meridians inside his body had been developed by the forced circulation of Zhen Qi! Next step would be to start the operation of Star tomb tactic, which would continue to grow his cultivation day by day, and he would gradually become strong in this world as well.

Certainly, merely practicing a cultivation law was far from enough. He wanted to quickly increase his cultivation and for that, he must look

around for some heavenly treasures, medicinal herbs, medicinal pills, in order to absorb the divine Lingqi accumulated in them. Only then, his cultivation growth would become very fast!

But now that he had gained the ability to produce Zhen Qi, he could protect himself, because he could finally display the most basic fighting technique of the World of the Immortals – Bagua Fist.

In the World of the Immortals, the main fighting techniques used were powerful immortal techniques. Using them, one could spit clouds, walk on the wind, topple the mountains and overturn the seas and all kinds of unfathomable tricks. This Bagua fist technique was used by no one in actual combat, but unfortunately, Ye Feng could only use Bagua fist as there was not enough Zhen Qi in his body, so using a fist technique was all he was capable of.

In the Bar Street, if he could use Bagua fist technique then he wouldn't need to run from the drunkards of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Finally, he could feel that his body was getting stronger little by little.

Ye Feng felt relaxed and went to bed.

.....

The next morning he woke up early and decided to go to the Yan High School.

He certainly did not want to go to school, but this world's Ye Feng had

a best friend who studied in his class and his family had a business of antiques. He wanted to have a look as he might find some treasures among the antiques.

He still had the check of 200,000 and if he could find some good practice resources then that would very cost-effective.

From the memories, he had come to know that in this world, there was a fearful presence of firearms. At his current strength, if he was to face these firearms, it would be very difficult for him to escape, so he must gain strength as soon as possible.

Yan High School was not far from 'Qingfeng Park' villa district.

Ye Feng went out of the villa and spent more than twenty minutes walking to the school. When he was approaching the school door, a car stopped beside him. Sitting on the front passenger seat was a beautiful girl clad in white dress and she was none other than the beautiful Xiaohua of his school, Su Menghan.

"Hmph."

Su Menghan saw him but there was a bitter expression on her face. She came out of the car and walked straight towards the school gate. Her beautiful appearance and exquisite graceful figure instantly attracted the attention of many boys.

As far as the attitude of this so-called school beauty was concerned, Ye Feng naturally did not care.

But when he looked towards the school gate, he was suddenly startled. He saw three slovenly guys standing near the school gate with a white snake painted on their cuffs.

Members of Heavenly Serpent Gang!

These three goons of Heavenly serpent gang had certainly come here to teach him a lesson.

When they saw Su Menghan, they immediately recognized that she was the girl from last night, but they had not come for her. They had thoroughly investigated and knew that the girl from last night was the daughter of Su Sheng Group's chairman. Although they were not afraid of the other party but they didn't want to needlessly get into trouble.

However, since this girl had appeared then that Ye Feng brat should also come, right?

Sure enough, they looked around and located Ye Feng leisurely walking towards the school gate. They immediately laughed and geared up to fight.

“They are.....”

Su Menghan saw the three goons at the school gate and felt a little strange. She saw them slowly approaching Ye Feng with malicious smiles on their face and all of a sudden she realized that they had come for Ye Feng.

“Su Menghan, you are early today, ah, I’m so glad to see that you are alright.”

An equally slovenly voice reached her ears. It was Tian Youliang who had abandoned her and escaped last night.

She didn’t even give him a glance as she was really disinclined towards paying attention to an unreliable ‘gong zi’ like him. Right now, she was concerned about Ye Feng’s safety. (NT: ‘gong zi’ is an honorific for ‘son of an official’)

She felt a crisp pain in her heart. Although she wanted that repugnant Ye Feng to suffer, but deep in her heart, she was somewhat worried.

Tian Youliang came next to her, still wearing the black leather jacket, but when he realized that she was ignoring him, his complexion darkened. Certainly this was because of things that happened last night but now she didn’t even want to exchange greetings with him.

Tian Youliang looked towards Ye Feng, who was slowly walking towards the school gate, and thought: “Boy, although I don’t know how you saved Su Menghan last night, but now that you have provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, get prepared to die.”

Ye Feng gradually approached the school gate and the situation looked somewhat tensed.

When other students sensed that something was wrong, they stopped

near the school gate to see what was going on. The three goons were smirking and walking towards Ye Feng.

The security guard saw this scene but didn't do anything. How could a mere security guard like him dare to annoy the members of influential and untouchable Heavenly Serpent Gang?

He didn't want to get involved with the Heavenly Serpent Gang because if tried to interfere in this matter, he might not be able to continue his job. Right now he was just hoping that the student wouldn't be fatally injured after receiving the beating and when this was all over, he would immediately call the ambulance.....

“Boy, be sensible and come with us.”

A thin and tall goon looked playfully at Ye Feng and said.

Even after seeing the arrogant and overbearing attitude of the opposite party, Ye Feng's facial expression didn't change instead there was a calm look on his face. He suddenly stepped forward and condensed Zhen Qi in his right leg and instantly kicked out!

Dealing with people like this, he won't show them any mercy, because for him, talking rubbish with them was just a waste of time. In the World of the Immortals, even a second of distraction could lead to death, so why would he waste time on idle talks?

“Peng” Ye Feng heavily kicked that guy between the two legs.

In a split second, the sound of an egg breaking resounded in the ears of all of the people. After hearing this sound, the bodies of almost all of the males simultaneously shivered.

Quite ruthless!

The thin goon's complexion paled as he could not bear the intense pain. He immediately kneeled down clutching his broken eggs between the legs.

“Attack!”

“Kill him!”

The other two goons had been stunned by this sudden turn of events, but they immediately reacted and did not hesitate to throw their fists at Ye Feng!

Chapter 006 – Best Friend Ouge

These three goons were the small fries of Heavenly Serpent Gang and they had been sent by Brother Tie to catch Ye Feng who had smashed the face of a member of their gang in the Bar Street.

Actually, they were not strong fighters and their strength was nothing compared to that of the drunken members of Heavenly Serpent Gang who had surrounded Su Menghan last night.

As the two goons threw their punches at him, the meridians in Ye Feng's body activated at once. He clenched his fists and Zhen Qi gathered up in both of his fists and he suddenly threw two subtle and matchless fists at them one after the other in a row.

Bagua fist!

His left fist hit a goon on the abdomen, while at the same time, his right fist punched on the chest of the other goon. With two successive loud pop sounds, everyone saw that the two goons spit a mouthful of blood and their bodies were sent flying and severely fell on the ground upside down, spreading a cloud of dust and their blood sprayed on the ground.

Ye Feng used just one hit on each of them to send them flying!

When people present near the school gate saw this scene, they were suddenly stunned.

Su Menghan widened her eyes in disbelief. She didn't know what to think because she just witnessed how a simple looking school boy had punched two goons and sent them flying.

It was just too shocking!

Last night, Ye Feng had used a half brick to knock down a drunkard and then he had escaped with her from the bar street, which she thought was a normal behavior for a school boy, but now, she noticed that the current Ye Feng seemed very different from before.

When Tian Youliang, who was standing beside her, saw how Ye Feng knocked down three members of Heavenly Serpent Gang without breaking a sweat, his jaws dropped down. He was totally bewildered because he just could not believe his eyes. Was this the same weakling who liked to go skipping to the internet cafes to play online games?

Just how much strength was needed to be able to actually send two adults flying?

At that time, Ye Feng noticed that four students were pointing their camera-phones at him and he could not conceal his surprise, because it was certainly not a man enough thing to do, taking video when a fellow student was being ganged upon by goons.

In this age of advanced communication and interconnected information system, it was impossible to stop the news about this incident from spreading, and soon, everyone in the Yan High School came to know about it.

The School gate security guard was stunned. He was well prepared to call the ambulance at any time but he just couldn't comprehend how a high school student had single-handedly knocked down three members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Finished, it's over for him. Today, a student has provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, and soon, he will suddenly disappear.....”

Although the security guard was surprised at the unexpected outcome of this fight, but he still felt sorry for Ye Feng and regrettably shook his head. After all, school kids were too young, too impulsive, and didn't know that waves calm down only for a short time!

The security guard was worrying for the safety of Ye Feng, a school student who had just provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang. But if these people knew what Ye Feng was thinking right now, they would definitely wet themselves.

“Today, this Heavenly Serpent Gang has caused too much trouble for me. I must find some time to get rid of them in one fell swoop.....”

Ye Feng thought then glanced at Su Menghan and Tian Youliang then walked straight inside the school gate. Since childhood, his beautiful master had taught him that if someone threatened him then he must get rid of them as soon as possible and must never let them go! This was one of the basic rules of survival in the World of the Immortals.

“Hmph, what's with that proud look on his face?”

Seeing that Ye Feng glanced at her but it was as if he wasn't looking at her at all. He immediately turned back to leave as if she was invisible to him which left a bitter feeling in her heart.

However, they were in the same class so she could only follow up behind him. Along the way, she was very unhappy at his attitude but she felt relieved in her heart that nothing happened to him. After all, he was her classmate, and she was also the reason why he had gotten involved with the underworld so she would obviously feel guilty if he was to get hurt.

.....

In a noisy third year classroom, Ye Feng entered the class, and suddenly, a silence spread, and all of the students started looking at him as if they were looking at a monster. Obviously, the news about the fight had already spread in the class.

“Damn, tell me man, when did you become so popular?”

A somewhat wretched voice resounded and Ye Feng looked towards the source of the sound and saw his best friend.

The boy was called Ou B, and his special trait was that half of his hair was white which made it easy for someone to recognize him in the crowd. (NT: Ou is the family name of Ou B)

Many years ago, the Hua State had allowed the use of English

alphabets in names. At that time, Ou B's grandfather felt that using English alphabets in the name would be quite fancy and he gave his son the name Ou A. And Ou A inherited his father's wishes and named his son Ou B and that's how he got his name.

“It's nothing. Oh, by the way, I have a request and there's something I need your help with.”

Ye Feng smiled and while ignoring the surprised looks on the faces of other students and their curious gazes, he went straight towards Ou B.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had seen a lot of treasures which would secretly absorb the Lingqi present in the atmosphere, and after absorption, they could enhance the rate of rise in cultivation. Ou B's family did business of antique objects so one could say that Ye Feng was in a great luck.

“Rest assured bud, your Ouge will solve all your problems.” (NT: Ouge: Elder brother Ou)

Ou B smiled and patted on the shoulder of Ye Feng and said: “Oh, by the way, I heard that some people from underworld ganged up on a student, ah damn, it's a good thing that I am a civilized guy

“Well, take me to your house tonight.”

Ye Feng straightforwardly stated his purpose, although he wanted to go right now, but such a request would seem irrational, after all, they were still students and they couldn't casually bunk classes.

“What, to my house?”

Ou B jumped up from his seat.

“En, to go and take a look at the goods and see if there’s something I can use.”

Ye Feng said while sitting on his seat at the back row in the classroom.

“Ha ha, I get it, I get it.”

Ou B’s eyeballs revolved in all directions and his face instantly exposed a wretched expression: “This time, there’s no shortage of beautiful girls in our class.....”

Ye Feng didn’t say anything and ignored him. He looked up and at the same moment, he saw Su Menghan entering the classroom clad in a graceful white dress. Her beautiful appearance immediately attracted the attention of the male students in the class, including Ou B.

“Gee, Su Menghan is so beautiful, and on top of that, her dad is the chairman of Su Sheng Group. Isn’t she a perfect girl? If I could just get off with her.....”

Ou B began to daydream.

Just then, Su Menghan turned towards Ye Feng and stared ferociously

at him.

Under her piercing gaze, Ou B suddenly felt a chill down his spine, but he soon realized that she was not staring at him, but at Ye Feng. He was suddenly alarmed and asked at once: “Bud, be honest and tell me, is there something going on between you and Su Menghan?”

Ou B certainly knew that Ye Feng and Su Menghan were neighbors.

“No.”

Ye Feng immediately denied.

“Damn it, it’s improper to lie to your brother!”

Ou B glared at him.

“There is nothing going on between us, trust me..... by the way, do you know about Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng did not want to listen to his crap and immediately changed the subject.

“Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

As Ye Feng had expected, Ou B fell into his trap and got distracted. He stared blankly at Ye Feng and asked: “I have heard of them, what about

it?”

“I just knocked down the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang.....”

Ye Feng told him everything.

“Crap, do you want to get yourself killed or what!”

When Ou B came to know that the three goons, who had the crap beaten out of them by Ye Feng, were actually the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, all of a sudden, he stared at Ye Feng with a frightened look in his eyes.

Heavenly Serpent Gang! It was one of the three influential gangs in the whole Yanjing city!

Ye Feng actually beat the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang?

Chapter 007 – Oval Faced Maiden

At the end of the school day, Ou B explained everything he knew about the Heavenly Serpent Gang and Ye Feng finally came to know how terrifying an existence this gang actually was.

Heavenly Serpent Gang was a strong dark influence and it had established a company which was secretly involved in selling drugs. It also operated a number of entertainment venues and casinos. It was said that severe measures had been taken against them several times but nothing worked.

“Such a large influence, it would be a pity to destroy them.....wouldn’t it better to find a way to gain their control in my hands?”

Ye Feng pondered that this would not be very bothersome if only he was in the World of the Immortals. There, he would easily formulate a poison to control the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Unfortunately, on the Earth, he did not know whether he could find the appropriate raw materials for the poison. Later he would go to the Chinese herbal medicine shop to take a look.

Ye Feng was not at all worried about anything, but Ou B had been worrying all day and why shouldn’t he? After all, his best friend had provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Well, let us go to your house.”

After the last lesson, Ye Feng stood up and said to Ou B. He and Ou B were the students of third year in high school so they did not need to self-study late at night.

“You really are.....”

Ou B helplessly shook his head as he could not figure out how could Ye Feng be so calm even after provoking the Heavenly Serpent Gang? And Ye Feng was also thinking of going to his house to find some “good stuff”?

They arrived at the school gate and saw that the three goons were long gone, only the blood stains remained on the ground. As a famous high school of Yanjing, the capital city China, no matter how arrogant the Heavenly Serpent Gang actually was, it would still not dare to enter the campus of Yan High School and act unruly.

Su Menghan was walking in front of the two and would occasionally turn back and look bitterly at Ye Feng. Later, she was picked up by Hu Meimei because from today onwards, she was going to live in the Yanxi villa, a place she did not like.

But all of this was a gift bestowed upon her by Ye Feng and was also the reason behind her bad mood all day.

Ye Feng naturally did not care about her and completely ignored her, in fact, she glared at him for a whole day but he simply didn't mind at all.

Ou B was being furtive and stealthy at the school gate and had been planning all day how to deal with the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, if they got attacked after coming out of the school. Although no one dared to offend the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but now that Ye Feng had provoked them, he would naturally not hesitate to stand by the side of Ye Feng.

“There’s no one suspicious outside, let’s go.”

Ye Feng swept his eyes outside the school campus and did not see any suspicious elements and went out of the school gate while pulling Ou B along with him.

Until they walked far away out on the street and did not meet any mishaps, only then Ou B relaxed a bit but then a solemn look appeared on his face: “Xiao mifeng, you shouldn’t go back home tonight. If the Heavenly Serpent Gang can find which school you go to then they must have also investigated where you live.” (NT: Xiao mifeng is a nickname given to Ye Feng by Ou B which means Small bee)

“So what?”

Ye Feng did not care about the Heavenly Serpent Gang but each time Ou B called him “Small bee”, he simply felt like dying.

“Are you really a fool or just try to act like one?”

Ou B scolded him and said: “Tonight, going back to your villa can be very dangerous! Perhaps, this time, they may send people with guns to

take you down.”

Ye Feng was surprised for a moment, because right now, he had still not grasped a way to resist against firearms: “It’s highly unlikely that they would send armed men to deal with a high school student.”

Although he had come from the World of the Immortals, but he still had the memories of this world’s Ye Feng and was very much familiar with firearms, in fact, this world’s Ye Feng was originally a shootout expert in gun-battle game named CF.

Ou B started to think more and more about this but he still couldn’t understand as to why the people of Heavenly Serpent Gang had stopped Ye Feng at the school gate? He didn’t want to believe that they would let Ye Feng off so easily.

“Well let’s go, first we will visit that Chinese medicine shop and have a look.”

Ye Feng spotted a Chinese herbal medicine shop, then nodded, and said while pointing his finger at it.

By the broad street, two rows of willows were planted on both sides, and the street had a variety of shops, and fortunately, he happened to find a traditional Chinese herbal medicine shop among them.

“What? Wait, now you want to go to a Chinese medicine shop?”

Ou B suspected they he heard it wrong and gave a strange look to Ye

Feng.

“I am looking for some good stuff.....”

Ye Feng said and walked towards that Chinese medicine shop.

However, when he came under a willow tree, suddenly, a tender figure fell down from the tree. Ye Feng's eyes moved swiftly and his hands reached out to catch that figure in his bosom.

What was going on?

A beauty just now actually fell down from the willow tree?

Ye Feng was puzzled then lowered his head and saw a beautiful maiden who was unconscious at the moment and had an appearance of 18 or 19 years old. She had an adorable delicate oval face that could easily incite tender affection for her. She was wearing a long blue skirt with flower patterns on it, breathing steadily with her chest rhythmically going up and down. She seemed just like a fairy in the arms of Ye Feng.

The girl was young, but her body under the skirt was actually quite exquisite, revealing her perfect curves, and was quite vivid and incisive! Especially her soft buttocks that were held in his hands right now and the wonderful touch made him to stare blankly all of a sudden. His brain was full of question marks, where did this baby face actually come from.....?

Suddenly, the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring, worn on his right hand

started to give off heat and his complexion immediately changed.

“Small bee, you

Ou B followed closely and approached him but saw Ye Feng embracing a lovely girl. He couldn't help but widened his eyes and glared while pointing his fingers at him: “You, you, you, you.....”

“What you? You go home.”

When Ye Feng noticed that the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring had begun to heat up on his right hand, he immediately understood that this girl was not ordinary and asked Ou B to leave.

Ye Feng didn't wait for Ou B to react and swept his eyes in all four directions while still holding the unconscious maiden and finally found a hotel. In order to avoid getting shot by the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, anyway it wasn't safe for him to go home tonight, so it would be better to spend the night at a hotel.

“Small bee! You want to do it don't you!”

Who would have thought that Ou B would not listen to him? He actually came in front of Ye Feng and blocked his way then shouted: “Let her go, your Ouge will never allow you to succeed in your dirty intentions.....” (NT: Ouge means Elder brother Ou)

With the fragrant body of a beautiful girl in his bosom, Ye Feng looked at Ou B who had a bewildered look on his face at the moment.

The sky was getting darker, and in the street, some people gradually began pointing at the two men. Ye Feng knew that he must hurry up and handle Ou B, or the crowd might cause trouble for them.

“Remember how I punched the two members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng asked in a serious tone.

“Ah? I remember.”

Ou B gawked and subconsciously nodded.

“Actually, I am a martial arts expert and this is my junior sister apprentice. She is seriously injured and I must find a place to heal her as soon as possible

Ye Feng finished the sentence and before Ou B could react, he bolted away in the direction of the hotel while still hugging the cute girl.

“What?”

When Ou B heard his words, he was again stunned for a moment and said to himself: “Is it true, small bee is actually a martial arts expert?”

His bewilderment was understandable, after all, this morning, he had also seen how Ye Feng had punched the two goons of Heavenly Serpent

Gang and sent them flying and this scene was still vivid in his mind.

But, before he could react, Ye Feng was nowhere to be found.

The crowd on the street gradually dispersed, but there was a shadow hidden in the dark, watching all of this.

After the school, Tian Youliang had followed Ye Feng all along, because he wanted to look at his miserable appearance after getting beaten by the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang on his way back home, but he never expected to see Ye Feng entering a hotel while embracing a young beautiful girl in his bosom.

A sinister look appeared on his face as he pulled out his phone and called his father.

“Damn, this time, if I didn’t ruin your reputation then my surname will not be Tian anymore. Ye Feng, get ready to enter the police station very soon.....”

Chapter 008 – Timely Help

Embracing the adorable girl in his bosom, Ye Feng quickly entered a hotel.

The man at the hotel's front desk saw a high-school student embracing a female high school student, and it was clearly visible that she was either drunk or unconscious. When Ye Feng asked for a room, the man looked at him with some contempt, but still opened a room for them and handed over the key.

It was obvious that this was not the first time this man saw something like this happening, he had seen things like this before, and each time he would witness such a thing, he would feel that the morality of the society was declining day by day.

Ye Feng didn't have free time to pay attention to what others were thinking of him and he quickly entered the room and placed the maiden on the sofa.

Just now, he had not invented a story in front of Ou B, because this adorable girl was indeed injured. Moreover, some tracking powder was sprinkled on her body and it was obvious that she was being chased down by people who wanted to kill her.

Earlier when he was talking nonsense to Ou B, Ye Feng had used his Zhen Qi to eliminate the tracking powder from her body. And this way, he had finally found the source behind the sudden heating up of his Dragon Sword Ancient Ring.

The source was the girl's chest. Something was hidden in there and was causing the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring to give off heat non-stop. (NT: :P)

Compared to the injured girl, Ye Feng was clearly more interested in the thing hidden in her chest. With slight hesitation, he put his hand into the neckline of her blue skirt to see what it actually was.

As expected, his hand felt a sensation of soft plump touch which made him somewhat embarrassed. This was like taking advantage of an unconscious girl and was definitely not a gentlemanly behavior.

However, this girl really had one pair of plump breasts, soft and rounded and gave a plentiful feeling when touched, and that feeling of elasticity and bounce..... Keke, but fortunately this course of events didn't last longer and he quickly took out that thing from her chest. (NT: keke depicts a coughing sound)

He took out three medicinal herbs and each of them had five thin leaves with golden colored central rhizome.

Seeing those three herbs, Ye Feng could not help but exclaimed with a look of ecstasy on his face. So it actually turned out to be golden leaf grass? As they say, God has eyes, and this time, it was really a timely help!

Golden leaf grass was a very common medicinal herb in the World of the Immortals and had a variety of functions.

For example, the three golden leaf grasses, currently held in the hands of Ye Feng hands, were all five years old and if even one of them was consumed, the Lingqi contained in it could promote the cultivation, and this rise would be equivalent to 5 months worth of cultivation. This was only the first time effect of consuming a golden leaf grass and it had other effects as well.

In addition to that, Ye Feng also knew a recipe to use golden leaf grass to create a poison which could easily deal with the situation of Heavenly Serpent Gang. This poison was enough to control an ordinary person and even if it was the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, once poisoned, he would be bound to obey Ye Feng.

These golden leaf grasses were clearly the treasures of this girl. No wonder she had properly hidden them in the cleavage of her boobs.

“Well, one grass can be used for healing and one for refining the poison also I can use one more for

Ye Feng looked at the unconscious girl on the sofa and somewhat hesitated.

It was obvious that his current behavior was undoubtedly equivalent to taking advantage, but the golden leaf grass was too important to him right now and he didn't want to return them. Might as well save her life with one of the three grasses, then won't she owe the other two grasses to him?

After all, if Ye Feng had not saved her, then perhaps, she might have

been caught by those people who were chasing her and she might have faced serious atrocities or lost her life.

He took a golden leaf grass and forced it into the mouth of that cute girl and closed it tightly. Then he started the slow circulation of Zhen Qi in his hand and slowly pushed the golden leaf grass to make her swallow. Swallowing a golden leaf grass in such an unconscious state was not so easy, but fortunately, Ye Feng was there to help her. She coughed up a few times and finally swallowed the golden leaf grass.

Then Ye Feng held the delicate wrist of that girl and slowly began to probe her body by sending his own Zhen Qi into her body. He began to guide the lingqi released from the golden leaf grass in her body to help her heal.

This was no trivial matter!

Ye Feng was astonished and stood up all of a sudden because while probing her body, he felt that the acupuncture points present in the meridians within her body were actually open, and there was also some kind of strange power flowing in her body, just like some kind of core law.

“How is this possible, there’s no Core Dan in her Dantian then how can she practice?”

Ye Feng suddenly remembered his own words that he had arbitrarily said to Ou B, a while ago, and they actually turned out to be right. From the memories of this world’s Ye Feng, the legend about the world of martial arts was not supposed to be present in this world. Could it be

that this girl actually belonged to a circle of martial artists like him?

Ye Feng was not familiar with the strange power present within her body, but it was obviously not Zhen Qi, and it was also not as powerful as the Zhen Qi. To be specific, she actually had 8 years of cultivation, but he could determine that he would only need to have 4 years of cultivation to be able to catch up with her strength.

The might of Zhen Qi was probably twice the might of that strange power flowing in her body.

Ye Feng tried to restrain the intense feeling of surprise in his heart and while he was clearing the meridians inside her body with the controlled circulation of his Zhen Qi, he discovered several internal wounds and the meridians had been torn open that had caused the leakage of energy inside her body and was the primary reason behind her unconsciousness. Fortunately, the effects of golden leaf grass were very good for healing and coordinated with the Zhen Qi control technique of Ye Feng, such small injuries would be quite easy to heal.

It did not take much long and Ye Feng fully cured all the broken meridians in her body then let go of her wrist.

“Although I saved her, but in the end, I have also taken her things, and if she woke up now, then with my current cultivation level, it would be impossible for me to take her on.....”

Ye Feng thought that it would be better to leave as soon as possible.

He glanced around in the room, and found a pen and paper prepared on one side of the cabinet. He walked over to the cabinet as he wanted to write something in a note addressed to her. At least, he wanted to tell her what happened and apologize for taking her golden leaf grasses.

But just when he was about to pick up the pen to write a note, the unconscious girl suddenly opened her eyes and sat up instantly!

“Who are you!”

The girl didn’t stay unconscious for a long time and was exceptionally astute. She knew very well that she was being chased down by people so as soon as she woke up, she gave a wary look to Ye Feng, who, at the moment, was standing next to the cabinet.

Her voice was very pleasant to hear, very mellow and crisp, like the sweet chirping of an oriole, but there was a hidden murderous touch in that melodious voice.

“Girl

Ye Feng was a little embarrassed and immediately wanted to explain things to her.

But when she glanced at him, her sight fell on a thing present on the cabinet, and suddenly, a blush appeared on her delicate face. What she saw was one of the goods supplied by the hotel, a box of “X Yang God Lu”. As for the pen and paper present in front of Ye Feng, she didn’t see.

This boy, he intended to do dirty things to her while she was unconscious?

Wrong!

She hurriedly inspected her own chest and noticed that the three golden leaf grasses were gone. Her complexion immediately changed then she looked up and fiercely stared at Ye Feng.

“Girl, since you woke up, I don’t need to write anything.”

When Ye Feng saw the accusing look on her face, his heart skipped a beat, but he made a poker-face and immediately said: “I saw you fainted on the street and brought you here. Now that you look all right, I’ll leave first.”

From his words, it seemed as if he was like an elder brother who was passing by the street and when he saw a girl fainted on the street, he kindly gave her a helping hand. Listening to his words, one would have no alternative but to think how kind of a person he really was!

The girl gawked for a moment, and it seemed like she was pondering about the authenticity of his words. She realized that the wounds inside her body were now healed and her broken meridians were cured as well. Not just that, the tracking powder on her body was also gone, this clearly showed that someone must have saved her.

Could it be that this boy was the one who saved her?

While looking at Ye Feng, she secretly made a guess. But even if he had saved her, she still didn't want to let go of the golden leaf grass. She had been tracked down, injured, solely because of those three golden leaf grasses, and now that she had lost them, it meant that all the hard work she had done for the past one month would go in vain.

Ye Feng secretly looked at the balcony and noticed that it was already dark outside. If he ran out now, escaping should not be a problem for him.

At first, the girl intended to take hold of Ye Feng as fast as possible and Ye Feng was also preparing to escape, when at this time, something strange occurred.

All of a sudden, the hotel room's door was forced open from outside and a sharp voice resounded.

“Anti-vice, hands up!”

Chapter 009 – Serious Crime

When the room's door was wrecked, Ye Feng reacted immediately and turned towards the window to jump out and leave.

However, someone else's reaction was faster than his reaction.

He saw that the maiden instantly jumped up from the sofa, and without warning, her kick went flying towards him.

Ye Feng was vigilant and without wasting any time, he immediately condensed the Zhen Qi in his palm in order to catch her kick. But, contrary to his anticipation, her kick changed direction midway, cleverly from bottom to upper region of his body, and heavily kicked on his chest.

“Bang”, he fell heavily against the wall with a stinging pain in his chest.

Eight years of cultivation was not to be taken lightly.

“Don't tell me that you have only recently started to practice martial arts?”

The maiden slightly curled up her mouth and a pair of beautiful eyes flashed at him. She looked like a quick-witted girl and her whole appearance had an air of elegance and unconventional grace: “Bye bye~”

She apparently did not want to get into trouble with the police, and right then, he noticed that her figure looked like a beautiful flower under the blue dress. She smiled tenderly at him, and soon after, she took a small step on the sofa and floated out of the balcony and disappeared.

Ye Feng wanted to cry but he had no tears to shed.

Fortunately, at the key moment, he had condensed Zhen Qi in his chest otherwise her kick would have seriously wounded him. However, even so, he only had one day worth of cultivation and the weak Zhen Qi wasn't enough to defend him from the kick thrown by a master with eight years worth of cultivation. After receiving her kick, it temporarily left him paralyzed and unable to move.

A lineup of uniformed police rushed in, led by an aquiline-nosed, small-eyed, sinister-looking insidious man.

“Handcuff him.”

The aquiline-nosed man pointed at Ye Feng then he immediately went to the balcony and tried to track the beautiful maiden but she was long gone and disappeared without a trace, and he had to give up.

However, so long as he grabbed this kid called Ye Feng, it was sufficient.

Aquiline-nosed man was thinking that thanks to that beautiful girl's kick, it became so easy to seize Ye Feng, and laughed.

“Young man, by coming to a love hotel at such a young age, you have forced this policeman to educate you well.”

The aquiline-nosed man said in a thick voice and waved his hand: “Take him away and lock him up!”

In his opinion, although dealing with this kid was only a minor matter, but it was going to be a beneficial thing for him, because by doing this favor, he could expect good repayment in the future.

And at this time, Ye Feng couldn't resist and his only option was to behave obediently.

If he had not been kicked by that beautiful maiden then why would he be afraid of the police? Unfortunately, right now, he could only be seized by the opposite party. He was arrested and brought to the police station.

.....

It was dark outside, and in a small, dark, narrow and gloomy interrogation chamber, that aquiline-nosed, small-eyed policeman began to interrogate Ye Feng along with another middle-aged policeman, with a deadpan look on his face.

“Name?”

Aquiline-nosed policeman asked.

Ye Feng was sitting opposite to the two policemen, continuously thinking about the possibilities of escaping from there, but finally concluded that it would be difficult to escape from this place as both his hands were handcuffed, and at his current cultivation, it would be difficult to escape using his strength. If he ate a golden leaf grass then it would enhance his cultivation considerably, but doing so in this environment was too dangerous, and it would be bad if his meridians fractured because of too much intake and it could seriously injure or kill him.

“Ye Feng.”

He decided to cooperate and see what their purpose actually was. Anyway, he had not done anything wrong so he was calm and wasn't worried one bit.

“Sex?”

The aquiline-nosed policeman continued to ask.

“Age?”

“High school?”

Ye Feng obediently answered all the questions thrown at him.

At this time, that aquiline-nosed man answered a phone call: “Hello, Boss Tian right? Well, I have taken care of it, but this kid is very obedient, do you really think.....?”

Boss Tian?

When Ye Feng heard this, he was somewhat puzzled. Who was this Boss Tian? Among all the people known to this world's Ye Feng, the only one with this surname was Tian Youliang. Could it be that this Boss Tian person was actually Tian Youliang's father?

In Yan High School, Tian Youliang could be considered a wealthy guy, and that was because his father had a company, and small assets, so knowing police was not much surprising, and it seemed that Tian Youliang had asked his father to create troubles for Ye Feng. Ye Feng was a smart guy and quickly linked the events to understand what was going on.

“If they want to falsely accuse me then I can't just sit here and do nothing.”

Ye Feng immediately started to run his mind, thinking about the countermeasures.

“Speak, why were you with a prostitute?”

After answering the phone, the aquiline-nosed man did not ask those irrelevant questions anymore and directly changed the nature of his interrogation and started pressing the charges of involving with prostitution.

Ye Feng: “I have nothing to do with prostitutes or prostitution.”

“Nonsense!”

The aquiline-nosed man pounded his hand on the table and aggressively said: “We have solid evidence regarding this matter. You seem like an energetic young man, so sometimes, making mistakes is understandable, and it’s not a big deal, you will just get detained for ten days and you will also have to pay a small fine.”

He tried to persuade Ye Feng because if he admitted his crime then things would be much easier. In fact, they couldn’t catch the girl so they didn’t have the evidence to press charges against Ye Feng for getting involved in prostitution. But, this was police station and they held the authority and the final say.

“I haven’t done anything.”

Ye Feng refused to admit as he certainly would not admit to something he had not done, moreover this was detrimental to his reputation.

“It appears that without suffering a bit, you will not admit your crime.”

The aquiline-nosed man smiled coldly and abruptly stood up.

Ye Feng was vigilant, and thought, should he begin now?

But at this moment, that aquiline-nosed man’s cell phone rang again. He glanced at his phone and answered it: “Hello, Liu Ju?”

“Xiao Zhang, open the door.”

When the aquiline-nosed man heard the voice on his phone, his attitude immediately became very respectful, and opened the back door of the interrogation room. There stood a potbellied middle-aged man, and he was the one that the aquiline-nosed man referred as “Liu Ju” just now on the call.

That middle-aged man took a good look at Ye Feng’s face, then smiled and patted on the shoulder of that aquiline-nosed man then said: “Little Zhang, you have done a very good job this time, according to reliable sources, this kid is a major suspect in a rape case, which is a much serious crime compared to his involvement in prostitution. Interrogate him properly, after all, it’s the job of the police to get rid of evil people you know?”

He was the chief of the Public Security Bureau and had just now received two calls in a row. The first call was from the assistant of the chairman of Su Sheng Group, suggesting that he must deal with the just caught high school student, named Ye Feng, who was right now in their custody.

He also felt strange because he couldn’t understand why Su Sheng Group was spying a high school student. But then he immediately got another call from his boss, making him to break into cold sweat, and his boss repeatedly told him the same thing again and again that Ye Feng must be restrained at any cost and must also be brought to justice by the law, and severely punished.

From the tone of his boss, he soon realized that this kid must have offended some powerful people, so powerful that even his boss couldn't dare to offend them and was respectfully following their orders. Liu Ju was somewhat puzzled, because a high school student could offend just anyone, but how could he offend such powerful people. Whose daughter did he actually rape?

Of course, Chief Liu was confused and was trying his best to make out something from this matter but he did not dare to ask his boss about it. He just decided to follow the instructions and act accordingly.

“That’s my job Liu Ju!”

Aquiline-nosed man was very happy at the moment because Liu Ju’s words rang in his ears like a melodious music. He thought that this kid seemed to have offended a lot people. The prime suspect in a rape case, wasn’t this charge worse than the charge he was asked to put on Ye Feng? He would be sentenced for at least two years for this!

Liu Ju walked up to the aquiline-nosed man, stood next to him, whispered a few words into his ears, then stood at one side and did not leave. This obviously showed that he was taking Ye Feng’s case very seriously and was attaching great importance to it.

The aquiline-nosed man listened to the whispers, nodded his head, then turned his head and said to the middle-aged pokerfaced policeman: “Search again.”

The two policemen headed towards Ye Feng.

“Search again?”

Ye Feng frowned because he vaguely heard the whispers of Liu Ju while he was whispering into the ears of the aquiline-nosed man, saying “three grasses” and so on. After hearing about the three grasses, he immediately understood what was going on.

When he was brought into the interrogation chamber, they confiscated his mobile phone. The words “Search again” implied that now, if they thoroughly searched his body then the 200,000 check, two golden leaf grasses and the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring would definitely be found and removed.

That was not good! He must take action as fast as possible.

Chapter 010 – High Ranked Officer Pressured

Ye Feng felt a little strange. He knew that the adorable oval-faced girl was obviously fierce so why would she just let go of the golden leaf grasses?

Now, it appeared that the other party made the move fearing that he might escape with the grasses. That pretty girl had quite a large influence in the city, at least enough to command the chief of the Public Security Bureau.

Ye Feng could not just sit still and do nothing while the other party was so close to take away the golden leaf grasses from him.

In his heart, he somewhat regretted his actions. If only he knew that it was better for him to immediately leave rather than to write a note for the unconscious girl. Maybe then he would not have fallen into such a trouble. However, that was not necessarily the case, because even if he had escaped at that time, the opposite party could still find him from the hotel registration card, so the final result would still be the same.....

“I advise you to coordinate with us, so as to avoid any hardships.”

The aquiline-nosed man said in an overbearing tone while he was coming towards Ye Feng along with the middle-aged policeman. In the eyes of these two, Ye Feng was just a high school student, and handcuffed at the time, so he wasn't a threat at all.

Standing nearby, Chief Liu was waiting and also looking forward to the time when the two would seize the three golden leaf grasses from Ye Feng, and after turning them over to his boss, he would be awarded handsomely for his meritorious service. Although he did not know why his superior was attaching great importance to the three grasses, but he just needed to do his job as told, and sometimes, knowing too much was not a good thing.

But just when the middle-aged policeman and aquiline-nosed man were getting closer and about to reach Ye Feng, he suddenly jumped up, withdrew several steps and stood against the wall, and using both of his handcuffed hands, he took out a golden leaf grass from his inner pocket.

He had placed the two golden leaf grasses and the 200,000 check in his inner pocket, so these items had not been confiscated by the police like his mobile phone.

At this moment, he wanted to eat a golden leaf grass then quickly absorb the Lingqi contained in it. If he could achieve the five-month cultivation then he could easily destroy the handcuffs.

Although, in the current situation, the process of absorption of Lingqi from the golden leaf grass would be quite dangerous, because if not done in a proper manner, then it could cause severe damage to the meridians inside his body and he might die a violent death as a result, but he had no other choice. If he didn't resist at this time, then not only the golden leaf grasses would be taken away, he would not have a good end, because he might really be falsely charged in a forged rape case.

How many years of sentence he might have to face for a serious crime like rape?

Ye Feng was certainly not willing to face such a situation.

Without wasting any time, he quickly put the golden leaf grass in his mouth and just when he was about to swallow it, suddenly, Chief Liu cried out: “Stop!”

Right now, Chief Liu was sweating profusely!

In the dim light, he could see the grass in the handcuffed hands of Ye Feng, and just as his boss had described on the phone, it had golden rhizome.

So this was the grass his superior was talking about!

In his superior’s tone, these three grasses were priceless, he didn’t care whether Ye Feng lived or died but the three grasses must be obtained from him at any cost. However, at present, Ye Feng was about to eat that grass, so how could this situation be good?

Chief Liu could foresee that if he couldn’t obtain those three grasses then he would most likely lose his head before his job.

“You are called Ye Feng isn’t it?”

Chief Liu realized that he must stand firm now in front of Ye Feng, so he quickly calmed down and spoke: “I urge you to not take any rash steps young man. If you really ate that grass then your crime will not be as

simple as the crime of rape.”

When Ye Feng heard his words, some thoughts passed rapidly in his mind and he stopped.

He was obviously not afraid of the opposite party, but realized that he could use golden leaf grass as a bargain chip to threaten the other party.

“Do you really want this grass? Then first let me go otherwise I will definitely swallow it down.”

Ye Feng and the other side were maintaining a distance, and the golden leaf grass was still in his mouth.

This action of Ye Feng caused a dark feeling to arise in Chief Liu’s heart along with anger. This rascal actually put the priceless grass in his mouth, so even if he managed to obtain the grass, won’t it still be filthy? His superior would surely blame him.....

“I cannot do that, this is police station, and everything happens according to law.”

Chief Liu had been at the position of Chief for several years so he was certainly very experienced at dealing with tough situations: “But, if you hand over all the three grasses, then no matter what charges put on you, I will make sure that you receive lighter punishment.”

In his opinion, Ye Feng was just a high school student, once scared a bit, he would eventually breakdown and listen to him.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was not an ordinary high school student, so how could he possibly be intimidated?

“Really? Then I’m sorry but I’m going to swallow it.”

Ye Feng moved his mouth, like chewing, in fact, of course, it was only an act.

He thought: That oval-faced girl did not seem to know that one of the three golden leaf grasses had already been used to treat her injuries, and she actually wanted all the three golden leaf grass back.

In retrospect, Ye Feng thought that using one of the golden leaf grasses to rescue her was really a big loss, but even if it was, Ye Feng would still make that choice.

After all, these golden leaf grasses belong to her and Ye Feng couldn’t go against his conscience to leave her dying and steal all the three grasses.

“Stop! Do not be too impulsive young man.”

When Chief Liu saw Ye Feng to make chewing movements, he suddenly panicked, but he was still calm on the surface: “Do you know the consequences of doing this?”

“Let me go otherwise whatever you say will just be a waste of time.”

Ye Feng seemed disinclined to talk nonsense with the opposite party and firmly said.

The two sides were deadlocked, the aquiline-nosed man and middle-aged policeman just stood there, not knowing what to do, and right at this moment, Chief Liu's mobile phone rang. He lowered his head and looked at the number displayed on the phone and his complexion suddenly changed and he hastily picked up the call.

After looking at the number displayed, he couldn't maintain his calm anymore.

He hurriedly ran out of the interrogation room and picked up the phone. Ye Feng and the other two policemen clearly heard his timid and submissive voice but no one knew who actually called.

Aquiline-nose man had a somewhat surprised expression on his face because he had not seen Chief Liu being so submissive and respectful even when he received calls from his superiors, so who was the one who called this time?

Ye Feng did not act rashly and tried to think, maybe, this was the call from the people who wanted to make his situation even more miserable. If he had the cultivation of ten years and practiced the Yin God technique, then his sense of hearing and vision would increase several times, then he would be able to listen what they were talking on the phone and would also know about this situation. Of course, if he had ten years cultivation then he would not have been caught by the police in the first place.

Sometime later, when the potbellied Chief Liu returned back to the interrogation room, he was already sweating profusely, and it was obvious that he was facing tremendous pressure.

He was separated by a few meters from Ye Feng, but this time, his manners were extremely respectful, and he politely said to Ye Feng: “Ye Shao, we are really very sorry, we unknowingly offended you..... You can leave now, this matter is merely a misunderstanding.”(NT: Shao means ‘young’)

When Ye Feng heard these words, he gawked for a moment, and thought, what actually happened just now?

“No!”

That aquiline-nosed heard the words of Chief Liu and immediately shouted with a surprised expression on his face: “Chief Liu Ju, he.....”

“Are you the Chief or me?”

Chief Liu Ju stared at the aquiline-nosed man and strictly said.

Aquiline-nosed man wanted to say something, but he was not a fool, seeing the respectful attitude of Liu Ju towards Ye Feng, he was a bit frightened deep in his heart. Just what was the extraordinary background of this Ye Feng to be able to put so much pressure on the Chief of Public Security Bureau?

There was blank look on Ye Feng' face. Just what kind of extraordinary background did this world's Ye Feng actually have that even he himself wasn't aware of?

Ye Shao?

“Why haven't you still removed Ye Shao's handcuffs?”

Chief Liu snapped and shouted.

Aquiline-nose heard and reluctantly walked towards Ye Feng.

When Ye Feng saw this, he was somewhat vigilant, but the aquiline-nosed man did not play any tricks, and with a dark expression on his face, he removed the handcuffs from the hands of Ye Feng.

Aquiline-nosed man was somewhat scared and speechless. Chief Liu answered a phone call and his attitude quickly transformed to such an extent.

Ye Feng knew that in today's China, the high ranked officials were often pressured, and it was obvious, the one who just now helped him was definitely not an ordinary person, and was one of the handful people who held powerful status to threaten even the Chief of Public Security Bureau, and the status of this person also seemed to be greater than that oval girl's background. Although he was feeling strange in his heart, but if police was trying to play tricks on him, then he would certainly not be fooled by this clumsy trick.

Chapter 011 – Weiming Lake

Although Ye Feng did not know about his own background, but he would definitely use this chance to make this aquiline-nosed man suffer a hardship for getting him into this mess.

After his handcuffs were untied, Ye Feng smiled and in a very friendly manner, he patted on the shoulder of the aquiline-nosed policeman and said: “Thank you for taking care of me. I will certainly engrave this in mind.”

The aquiline-nosed man’s face suddenly darkened with horror clearly visible on it, but still squeezed out a smile and whispered: “Ye Shao, I was blind, why would you care about a petty and insignificant man like me

“Oh? A moment ago, I think you seemed to be talking to some big personality?”

Ye Feng faintly smiled and said.

“What are you talking about?”

Aquiline-nosed man was almost scared to death, and in his heart, he cursed Boss Tian several times. Damn, he should have thoroughly investigated the background of Ye Feng before taking any major actions, because due to his negligence, he ended up kicking an iron wall.

In order to not incriminate himself in the eyes of Ye Feng, he made the decision almost immediately and said: “Ye Shao, I was instructed to do all this by Boss Tian, the chairman of Lantian Advertising company.....”

“Isn’t his son named Tian Youliang?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Correct.”

Aquiline-nosed man gawked for a moment.

“So the so-called protectors of justice, policemen, can also get their strings pulled by someone and can get controlled so easily, go back and get a good reflection on it.”

Ye Feng snorted and intentionally looked towards Chief Liu.

Chief Liu immediately perceived the look in Ye Feng’s eyes and responded: “Ye Shao, rest assured, Zhang Guocai has violated the discipline of police, so he will be suspended from duty effective immediately and an inspection will be also be performed.”

“En.”

Ye Feng put on airs and looked around, then calmly picked up his cell phone from the table then swaggered outside.

With a wide smile on his face, Chief Liu saw him off at the entrance of the police station, but when he looked at his own cell phone, he suddenly remembered something then looked up and said: “Wait, Ye Shao, I forgot to inform you that you will have to take the trouble of going to the Weiming lakeside, someone’s waiting for you there.”

“Weiming lakeside?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and responded immediately, but he quickly understood that this person was definitely the one who helped him from the shadows and now he was waiting for him at the Weiming lakeside.

From the memories of this world’s Ye Feng, it was obvious that he had never become friends with any great person, so Ye Feng was also a bit curious to know who this person really was, who actually helped him at such a critical time.

“Got it.”

Ye Feng nodded and left the police station. Today, he never expected to face so many unexpected situations, and now, he was going to meet his powerful savior.

After he left, Chief Liu finally relaxed.

“Liu Ju, what is the backing of this kid?”

Aquiline-nosed man could not help and finally asked.

“Well, about today’s matter, you are not allowed to mention to anyone. Starting tomorrow, rest at home for a week, do not come to work.”

Chief Liu’s whole body was already covered in cold sweat, and after solemnly warning the aquiline-nosed man, he turned around and left. This matter ended for Ye Feng, but it was not yet finished for him.

Because, he will have to find ways to explain things to the Chairman of Su Sheng Group, as well as his own boss. There was no way for him to tell them that the person who called in favor of Ye Feng was actually more ‘Niubi’ than his boss, that he couldn’t dare to hold Ye Feng even for a second after getting a call from that person. (NT: Niubi means kickass, flamboyantly strong)

He was just hoping that he wouldn’t lose his position as the Chief of Public Security Bureau because he was unable to obtain the three grasses as instructed by his boss.

.....

At this time, with a triumphant look on his face, Tian Youliang was already spreading the news on the internet group of their class that Ye Feng visited a prostitute and was involved in prostitution. He was arrested and was going to be locked up for more than 10 days, this news set off waves of rumors.

In the Yanxi villa, the unhappy looking Su Menghan had locked herself in her room, and to relieve her boredom, she was surfing on the internet, of course, also saw the news about Ye Feng.

“He visited a prostitute?”

Su Menghan thought of Ye Feng’s figure and could not help but be a little surprised.

She knew that Ye Feng was not such a type of person, well, he would always bunk classes and go skipping to play online games, but it was simply unfathomable for her to believe the news about Ye Feng visiting a prostitute.

She thought of calling Ye Feng, but then dropped the thought, and with a cool mind, she thought in her heart in a convincing manner that this wasn’t true right?

Just the thought of Ye Feng visiting a prostitute caused a burst of uncomfortable feeling in her heart and she felt like she would never think of that person again. She felt pathetic when she remembered the scene when she was embraced in his arms for a long time while escaping from those drunkards which made her feel even uncomfortable.

She got up and decided to take a bath, but just then, her phone rang.

She looked at the number, it was from Su Xinchang.

Hesitating a bit, she picked up the call.

“Su Menghan, regarding your matter, Dad has given a lot of thought

today.”

Su Xinchang’s prosperous voice conveyed from the phone and seemed to contain a self-rebuking touch: “If you do not want to stay together with Aunt Xie, starting tomorrow, you can go back to our Qingfeng Park villa.....”

“You are being so kind all of a sudden? Well, just state your purpose Dad.”

Su Menghan lightly snorted and said.

Her own mother had passed away, and this person her Dad just mentioned was “Aunt Xie”, whom her Dad remarried after his wife’s death. She was from the Yanjing City’s Xie Clan and Su Xinchang’s current achievements depended on Xie Clan to a great extent.

“Su Menghan, you deeply misunderstand Dad.”

Su Xinchang sighed: “Starting today, I will no longer interfere with you and Ye Feng’s matter. Last night, I had a very ill conceived approach about him. If you like him, I will support your relationship with him.”

It was not that Su Xinchang had developed conscience and compassion all of sudden, but he just received a phone call from Chief Liu Ju, and was informed about the ‘Niubi’ background of Ye Feng that even Chief Liu’s boss couldn’t put his hands on Ye Feng.

In that case, if he could use this opportunity to make his daughter, Su

Menghan, to get close to Ye Feng and they get together, then he would undoubtedly be very happy.

Nowadays Su Sheng Group was at the economical and political center of Yanjing City in China, but it was only a second-rate influence. He was currently relying on Xie Clan but it was also a second-rate clan.

Ambitious Su Xinchang didn't want to stop there and wanted to rise as high as he could and his relation with Ye Feng was going to be a great opportunity for him!

“I do not like that guy.”

Su Menghan said in a crisp voice and hung up the phone, and in her voice, an undisguised disgust for Ye Feng was clear.

Su Xinchang stood stunned after hearing her reply.

But he was not going to give up, and would continue to push Su Menghan towards Ye Feng, and this time, he planned to resort to a sure shot killer move. By using this move, Su Menghan would have no choice but to obediently listen to his words.

.....

It was already dark outside when Ye Feng left the police station, and a while later, it got completely dark.

Weiming Lake was an artificial lake inside the Yanjing University, and although he didn't know why the other party elected to meet in such a place, but Ye Feng still took a taxi and headed for Weiming Lake.

In this early April spring season, lovey-dovey couples could be seen roaming about in the Yanjing University everywhere. He was a student of Yan High School, and as a student, he had certainly visited Yanjing University before on school trips. Following his old memories, he walked towards the Weiming Lake.

“Weiming Lake is not small, where will that person wait for me?”

With some doubts in his heart, Ye Feng soon arrived at the stone road on Weiming lakeside and looked at the weeping willows lightly blowing in the breeze, and this atmosphere was pouring a somewhat comfortable feeling in his heart.

There were a lot of pedestrians on the lakeside but he did not see any suspicious looking individual among them.

But right at this time, a burst of gale suddenly hit him from behind!

“Sneak attack?”

Ye Feng immediately reacted and wanted to dodge to one side to see who it actually was, but things didn't go as planned and he couldn't dodge in time, and at that instant, it seemed as if a chestnut knocked on his head.

Teng!

Ye Feng was knocked down and he lost his balance and his body crashed into the willow tree trunk making him to suddenly feel dizzy and his vision blurred.

His mind was alert and he quickly stood up and hastily turned his head but didn't see anyone suspicious. There was only a University couple at the lakeside, giving him somewhat puzzled looks. They felt strange about this guy who seemed to be in good condition but still bumped into a tree.

Who was it?

Ye Feng was alarmed because it could be someone from the World of the Immortals who had stealthily attacked him!

“Brat, now do you feel emboldened?”

A slightly hoarse voice spread out of thin air and entered his ears.

Chapter 012 – Rumor Spreads Everywhere

“Grandpa?”

Ye Feng heard that voice and was startled then looked in all directions but couldn't see his grandfather's shadow anywhere.

However this voice indeed belonged to his grandfather, but the voice seemed to echo and also had a mysterious profoundness in it. Was the person who called Chief Liu and saved him actually his grandfather?

In Ye Feng's memories, his grandfather was a person he remembered since childhood, and also met him several times, but in his memories, he didn't have a profound impression of his grandfather, rather he seemed like a normal person. He had not seen him for several years, and every year, his grandfather just gave his school expense and living expenses, so in his heart, the image of his grandfather was nothing more than a shadow.

Until now, Ye Feng was waiting for the opposite party who saved him from a difficult situation but his savior actually turned out to be his own grandfather.

“So you brat still remember this old man.”

That slightly hoarse voice once again spread out of thin air: “Today I helped you settle the matter with that girl but if something happens later, then this old man may not settle it for you.”

Ye Feng heard this and immediately understood that his grandfather knew about the matter of the three grasses and the girl he saved today and he was the one who saved Ye Feng from this mess. Just what kind of authority and status this guy's grandfather held?

He could actually transmit his voice, and threw a chestnut from an untraceable distance, and it held enough strength to knock him down. Considering all these points, could it be that his grandfather was also a martial artist of this world like that maiden he saved today?

Moreover, his cultivation level was definitely not low!

Shua!

The gust of winds hit once again. Ye Feng tried to dodge again but was knocked by a chestnut, stinging in the back of the head, and was pushed two steps forward. This time, he turned his head quickly but still saw that University couple currently looking at him with surprised looks in their eyes.

“Hey, look this man was hit by a ghost just now!”

The girl said in a surprised tone to her lover while pointing at Ye Feng.

“Baby, you are an educated individual and still believe in ghosts, let's go, I think that person is mentally sick.”

The male University student held his girlfriend's hand, glanced once towards Ye Feng, and left in a hurry.

Ye Feng was totally helpless, hit by a ghost? Mentally sick?

“Well brat, this old man is quite busy and has other matters to take care of.”

That elusive hoarse voice started to mysteriously appear and disappear from one direction to another direction: “Remember, you must pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University and get admission at any cost. At that time, I will introduce you to your fiancée. As I recall, the granddaughter of that old man from the Lin Clan is pretty good, but you will have to work harder.....”

As the voice faded, Ye Feng felt the breeze flowing from all directions, and was somewhat startled in his heart.

There was no doubt that his grandfather was a martial arts expert. No wonder he was so elusive and mysteriously appeared and disappeared in all directions and Ye Feng couldn't sense his true location at all.

“Pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University then he will introduce me to my fiancée? Granddaughter of Lin Clan's old man?”

Ye Feng recalled these words and was a little aggrieved. As someone who had come from the World of the Immortals and had cultivated in order to become an Immortal, when did he ever need to listen to others? In addition to that, who was this Lin Clan's old man and his

granddaughter?

Although he was unhappy, but right now, he really didn't have a choice but to do what the other party said, because the other party was clearly much stronger than his current self.

“Even if I leave home, there's a high possibility that this old guy will find my trail..... it seems like I must increase my cultivation level as soon as possible, and gain a sufficient enough strength to protect myself, so for now, I need to follow a careful conduct and do as he says.”

Ye Feng slightly regretted in his heart because he wouldn't be able to cultivate unbridled as he initially planned. And not just that, contrary to what he thought, in this world, there were many people who could pose a threat to him.

“Well for the time being, what's the harm in listening to what this old man said?”

Ye Feng whispered in a soft voice.

It seemed that from the next day, he would be ensuring his own safety. He would enhance his cultivation and simultaneously ponder about how to get admitted into the Yanjing University.

There were three months left before the entrance examination of Yanjing University, and looking at his current grades, it was simply impossible for him to even dream about passing the entrance examination of Yanjing University. However, for the current Ye Feng,

with the virtue of cultivation memory, it would be easy for him to pass the entrance test and get accepted in the Yanjing University.

.....

He spent the whole night on the Weiming Lakeside.

During the first half of the evening time, he relaxed his mind, took out a golden leaf grass, and swallowed it. Till midnight, he completely absorbed the Lingqi present in it and finally achieved the five-month cultivation!

This achievement was not worth mentioning compared to his past cultivation level, but cultivation was the thing that needed to be accumulated bit by bit. Once he had five-year cultivation, he could practice agility technique, then it would not be easy for his grandfather to catch him, and only then he would feel safe.

Late at night, he silently walked around on the Weiming Lakeside.

He was walking around searching for some spiders, ants and centipedes. He bought a bottle of mineral water, dumped half the water from the bottle, then finally put those bugs and a golden leaf grass inside the bottle and soaked them together.

Five-month cultivation allowed him to control his inner Zhen Qi very smoothly and easily, and soon in a place where no one was watching him, he compressed a dark and swarthy pill inside the mineral water bottle.

This was the poisonous pill he was going to use to control the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang to ensure his own safety and also to gain control over the influence of this gang in his hands.

But, just now he realized that he did not know where the general assembly of the Heavenly Serpent Gang actually took place, and thought of Ou B.

“That kid’s information network is quite broad, there’s a chance he might know where I can find the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang. Moreover I also need to go to his house to look for antique goods. If there is any ancient jade Lingshi, then I can once again enhance my cultivation.”

Ye Feng had been busy all evening, first cultivating then refining a poison at the Weiming Lakeside, so early in the morning he went to a hotel in order to rest for a while.

.....

At this time, early in the morning, at Ye Feng’s residence, outside the residential villa of Ye Feng in the Qingfeng Park, three goons were waiting all night. They were the same three goons who had been beaten by Ye Feng yesterday at the school gate.

“It’s really bad luck, damn. We waited all night and that guy didn’t come back to his villa.”

The tall and thin goon said, and even now, his balls were still in pain, but fortunately, yesterday when he went to the hospital, the doctor said that the injury was not a big deal.

However, right now, they did not come looking for trouble with Ye Feng, but the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang was very much impressed with the ruthlessness of Ye Feng and ordered these three men to personally go over to his house and discuss the matter of inviting him to join the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“This boy has quite an impressive luck. Brother Tie took a fancy to him just by looking at his aggression and ruthlessness.”

Another goon enviously said.

“If you are also so ruthless like him, then Brother Tie will certainly take a fancy to you as well.”

Finally, the third goon with a cigarette in his mouth helplessly said.

How could they ever expect a trivial high school student to actually fight so ruthlessly? No wonder Brother Tie had his face smashed by a half-brick, because, Ye Feng was definitely not an ordinary guy as they thought.

They were waiting outside the Qingfeng Park but Ye Feng didn't come back home.

“First, let's report to Brother Tie, then we will find a place to sleep for a

while and later we will go to the Yan High School to look for him.”

Their leader, the tall goon, made the decision and took out his cell phone.

.....

Ye Feng slept until noon and when he woke up, he discovered that last night, he forgot to switch on his cell phone after picking it up from the table in the interrogation room.

He switched on his cell phone, only to find a lot of unread messages and missed calls, many of which were from Ou B. He got many voice mails from Ou B, who was scolding and yelling at him, convincing him that he should not go astray, and must never fall so low as to actually visit a prostitute. Once grasped in the tight clutches of prostitution, he would have a very dark future ahead. From now on, his life would be destroyed and he would lose everything and so on.....

Ye Feng didn't know whether to laugh or cry because it seemed that rumors about him had already spread throughout the Yan High School.

As for who spread these rumors, there was also no need to ask. Except the perpetrator, Tian Youliang, who else would know about these things?

Chapter 013 – Tail Incident

Ye Feng walked out of the hotel then went to a shop and bought something for lunch. After eating, he walked towards school.

In the afternoon, he arrived at Yan High School during the lunch break, before afternoon classes were going to start. He entered a third year classroom and the whole noisy classroom suddenly silenced down and a pin drop silence spread in the class.

More than fifty pairs of eyes started staring at Ye Feng.

“Small bee!” (NT: Small bee is Ye Feng’s nickname used only by Ou B)

Ou B was the first to react. He pounded his hands on the table and stood up and his face immediately lighted up with a happy expression spread all over his face.

Right now, in the classroom, others also reacted and were suspiciously staring at Ye Feng, whispering to each other.

“What’s going on, didn’t Tian Youliang say that he has been arrested for visiting a prostitute?”

“I don’t know, but he did not come in the morning, so it should be true right?”

On a front row seat, Su Menghan was preparing to have lunch when she looked up and saw Ye Feng and her water filled eyes opened widely and an incredible look appeared on her face.

He was arrested for having prostitution charges on him then how did he come out so quickly?

What Tian Youliang said was a lie? Well it could be, after all, she was aware of what kind of guy Tian Youliang actually was, so how could she believe the news circulated by him?

Su Menghan turned back and looked at Tian Youliang sitting next to the window and saw that there was a startled look on his face as well while he was staring at Ye Feng. He just never expected the sudden appearance of Ye Feng in the classroom.

Last night after Ye Feng was released from the police station, Chief Liu Ju informed Su Xinchang and his own boss, but as far as Tian Youliang's side was concerned, he certainly didn't bother to inform them. As for that aquiline-nosed police man, Zhang Guocai, because of this matter, he was suspended for one week along with inspection put on him, so how could he even dare to inform Boss Tian?

Thus, until now, Tian Youliang thought that Ye Feng had been detained for more than ten days and spread the news. He did not spare any effort in spreading this news throughout the school, and by now, almost everyone in the school knew that a high school boy named Ye Feng was involved in prostitution and had been arrested and detained for 10 days.

“You how.....”

Tian Youliang pointed at Ye Feng and said while somewhat stuttering.

“I how?”

Ye Feng lightly smiled as if secretly brewing something.

He would certainly not let off Tian Youliang so easily without teaching him a lesson.

Originally, Ye Feng didn't mind a small fry like Tian Youliang, but last night because of this small fry, he had to suffer a lot. If Ye Feng didn't teach him a lesson now then he would certainly feel sorry for himself.

“Don't come close!”

Seeing Ye Feng walking towards him, Tian Youliang could not help but think of the scene from yesterday morning when the two punks were sent flying by Ye Feng, and was scared that he would face the same misfortune.

“I feel too lazy to deal with you.”

Ye Feng smiled and shook his head, but at the same time, while facing Tian Youliang, he secretly released Zhen Qi from his body, and he did it so covertly that nobody discovered this action.

At this point, the boy seated in the seat next to Tian Youliang was suddenly taken aback and shouted while pointing towards his ass: “Tian Youliang, when did you grow such a long tail?”

“Tail?”

Tian Youliang also felt strange and turned his head back to have a look, but he actually saw that a long and fluffy tail had grown out from his butt. The tail looked like the tail of a black dog, was flinging from one side to another, and was almost 6-7 inches long.

“What!!!”

A scream immediately came out from the mouth of Tian Youliang.

He had a tail!

What was going on?

How could he possibly have a tail?

Everyone’s attention that was originally on Ye Feng was now diverted towards Tian Youliang’s long black tail. Their eyes were as if glued to the tail on Tian Youliang’s butt, and sure enough, this long and black-furry tail looked real as it was swaying.

“Wow, tail!”

“So amazing!”

In the classroom, the screams resounded and regardless of whether it was boys or girls, all of them were pointing towards Tian Youliang's tail. There were people who pulled out their cell phones and shot down this marvelous scene.

Two students next to Tian Youliang could not help but reached out and touched the tail and found out that it was a real tail, long and fluffy, but they couldn't figure out how he suddenly grew a tail?

Seeing that everyone was trying to touch his tail, Tian Youliang panicked and ran out of the classroom while miserably bawling, and the long black tail was swaying conspicuously behind him when he was running desperately in random directions.

Seeing this, Ye Feng laughed.

Compared to his prostitute incident, this incident about a tail mysteriously appearing on Tian Youliang's butt was clearly more attractive and drawing a lot of attention. He believed that soon, when the news about this tail incident would spread, the prostitute incident would be completely overshadowed by the tail incident throughout the Yan High School.

In fact, it was just a small trick to shift the attention from him onto Tian Youliang.

With his current five months of cultivation, he had been able to cast an Immortal technique called “camouflage” by condensing Zhen Qi and attaching it to Tian Youliang’s ass to create a tail. And doing so was not at all a difficult thing for him.

If his cultivation was profound then he could also use the same Immortal technique to change his external appearance, then he could easily take the appearances of others or even create illusions to trap the enemy.

Ye Feng’s cultivation was now at five months level and this was enough to easily congeal a tail.

The tail was not an illusion, it was real, and even if someone would reach out to touch it, they would get a fluffy feeling. But it was just condensed Zhen Qi and would disappear in few minutes.

However, a few minutes were enough.

At least long enough for the news about this tail incident to spread throughout the campus, enough to cover up the news of Ye Feng’s involvement in prostitution. Moreover, Ye Feng had safely returned to school, looked full of energy, nothing indicated that he had been arrested.

“Damn, Small bee, just what’s going on?”

When Ye Feng returned to his seat, Ou B immediately came over and sat in the adjacent seat and asked in a surprised manner.

Their president suddenly grew a tail, everyone was simply bewildered!

“I don’t know, perhaps it’s a punishment for his evil deeds?”

Ye Feng certainly would not say that it was his doing.

“Amazing, it’s truly mysterious.”

Not just Ou B, all of the students inside the classroom were boiling up, chattering with each other.

Ye Feng was actually a bit afraid that when the news about this incident would spread out, even if there were martial arts experts in this world, but Immortal techniques certainly wouldn’t exist in this world. There was a chance that they would start to suspect him.

Even Su Menghan’s face was full of surprise, with her attention completely fixated on Tian Youliang’s tail, and looking at the tail swaying up and down, left and right, she seemed to be totally taken aback.

After a long time, Ou B calmed down then suddenly thought of something and patted on Ye Feng shoulder: “Small Bee, what actually happened last night? I really thought that you have been arrested.”

Regarding this issue, Ye Feng had already prepared an excuse: “I went to see Grandpa.”

He did not deny being arrested but also said the fact.

“That’s good well, what happened to that young girl?”

Ou B shifted the conversation to the matter that he was most concerned about.

“Young girl?”

Ye Feng could not bear wanting to punch him. Even now, this guy was still thinking about that last evening’s pretty girl.

Ou B continued to think about her after seeing her last evening, but Ye Feng simply didn’t care. Just the thought of that maiden caused a dull feeling of pain in his chest. He decided that someday, he would definitely return the favor for that kick.

The entire time during lunch break, the atmosphere was lively and everyone was talking about Tian Youliang’s tail nonstop. And the news about his tail quickly spread throughout the school.

As the classes were soon going to start, Ye Feng felt a burst of fragrance next to him and tilted his head to look on his side. He saw that Su Menghan stood next to him and she bitterly said: “Ye Feng, you come out with me.”

“What?”

Ye Feng looked somewhat strangely at her. He always thought that this Xiaohua hated him then why would she suddenly take the initiative and come to him?

Chapter 014 – Su Menghan's Request

“You want to talk to Small bee!”

When Ou B saw that Su Menghan wanted to talk to Ye Feng, he suddenly jumped up.

Ye Feng pressed him back to his seat then stood up and said to Su Menghan: “Whatever it is, say it here.”

“You won't dare to come out?”

Su Menghan said bitterly then extended her hand and grabbed Ye Feng's wrist and walked out of classroom while pulling him with her.

Ye Feng now had a cultivation of five months and possessed considerable physical strength but when he saw Su Menghan desperately trying to drag him out of the class along with her, he immediately understood that something must have happened and decided to play along.

Listening to her for once wouldn't harm him anyway.

As soon as they went of the class, everyone in the class once again started talking among themselves. What was this all about, the school's number one beauty actually took the initiative and approached Ye Feng,

and not just that, she also held his hand and ran out?

What were they going to talk about?

Today, too many news exploded and spread throughout the Yan High School! First about Ye Feng's involvement in prostitution and getting arrested, which was shocking enough, followed by Tian Youliang actually growing a dog's tail, and then everyone's favorite Xiaohua, Su Menghan, actually took the initiative and pulled Ye Feng out of the classroom to talk about something!

Gossips were burning like fire and spreading everywhere. A group of people wanted to eavesdrop on Su Menghan and Ye Feng but their attempt failed when they saw the two people going all the way to the playground. The students who wanted to eavesdrop were immediately disappointed, because it was obvious they couldn't possibly follow all the way to the playground to eavesdrop.

They still remembered the scene from yesterday morning when Ye Feng had sent the two goons flying near the school gate and they certainly didn't want to face the same thing.

Su Menghan and Ye Feng finally arrived in the playground.

It was a beautiful sunny afternoon and there was no one in the playground, so it was the most appropriate place to talk.

"Well, what do you want to talk about?"

Ye Feng walked as he asked.

“I.....”

Su Menghan looked at Ye Feng, the boy who had been her neighbor for a long time, but she was still not much familiar with him, and this was the first time she discovered that he was very handsome.

She shook her head because now was not the time to think about those things. She slightly hesitated then tilted her head to one side in order to avoid direct eye contact with him and said: “I brought you here to tell you that I am ready to give you a chance to pursue me, my dad is no longer against it, what do you say?”

As these words came out of her mouth, Ye Feng suddenly smiled.

He carefully sized up the school Xiaohua standing in front of him, perfect oval face, delicate features, quite an exquisite body, and in just one look, one could say that she was incomparably attractive.

If she said the same thing to other boys of Yan High School, they would certainly be overjoyed and would hastily agree without waiting even for a second. Unfortunately, she was not facing just any boy, she was facing Ye Feng.

“Sorry, I don’t have any interest in you.”

Ye Feng chuckled, shook his head and turned around to leave.

When Su Menghan heard his reply, she could not help but gawked for a moment, until Ye Feng turned away, she finally responded: “Hello!”

She grabbed Ye Feng’s arm and stopped him from leaving. Just what was this ridiculous situation and that too when she finally reached an agreement with her father, how could she allow this thing to go wrong at such a critical time?

Su Menghan thought in her heart, didn’t it seem as if she was forcing Ye Feng to pursue her? This was really too outrageous!

“Just come with me on a trip to Langfang, don’t you want to?”

She stated her true purpose.

Langfang was a city located in the southeastern direction of Yanjing city and not far away. If she only wanted him to accompany her on a trip, then it was not a big deal, at least for other boys who would absolutely agree without hesitation.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn’t have time to accompany her on a trip. What a joke, he’s really wasn’t interested in her then why must he accompany her on a trip?

“You will still have to find someone else.”

Ye Feng shook his head and shook off her hand and walked away. He

must hurry back and discuss with Ou B about going to his house to find antique goods.

Su Menghan saw him walking away and angrily stamped her foot.

This Ye Feng, it was so hard to understand what he was actually thinking!

She had only one favorable impression of him when he rescued her in the bar street from the members of Heavenly serpent gang, other than that, he was totally annoying.

If not necessary, she would never approach one step near Ye Feng, let alone taking the initiative to talk to him. But last night, Su Xinchang made an agreement with her that as long as she maintained a good relationship with Ye Feng, then he would allow her to go to Langfang to visit her grandmother.

The woman whom Su Xinchang remarried to was a member of Xie Clan, and was a very caustic, narrow-minded and mean person and didn't like Su Menghan one bit. At the time of marriage, she had put forwards a condition in front of Su Xinchang that if he wanted Su Menghan to stay with him, then she would never go back to see anyone from her maternal family.

Su Xinchang also thought that if his daughter went back to her maternal home then her lifestyle would certainly be inferior to her current lifestyle and therefore promised his second wife that he wouldn't allow Su Menghan to go her maternal home in Langfang, isolating her from the family of her deceased mother.

This was main cause of friction between Su Menghan and her father.

This time, Su Xinchang finally made some concessions and allowed her to finally go back to see her grandmother, but the condition was that Ye Feng would also accompany her. How could she be willing to let go of this opportunity?

Su Menghan bitterly returned to the classroom and stared at Ye Feng then went back to her seat. Ignoring the gazes and gossips of other students, she began to think about countermeasures.

“Small bee, what did she talk about? I thought that she wants to eat you whole. Don’t tell me that she is jealous because she believes that you visited a prostitute…….”

Ou B sat beside Ye Feng and started an endless gossiping session.

“Do not talk nonsense. She wants me to accompany her on a trip to Langfang, but I don’t have spare time for that.”

Ye Feng shook his head and said as if he didn’t care.

“Accompany her on a trip to Langfang?”

Ou B felt somewhat strange about this. He was naturally an outsider and didn’t know about her family circumstances so only shook his head and didn’t say anything.

He and Ye Feng were childhood buddies and Ye Feng certainly wouldn't lie to him.

Evening classes ended.

Ye Feng decided to go to Ou B's house and search for antique treasures which might contain sufficient Lingqi so as to enhance his cultivation as soon as possible.

In order to avoid trouble, the two friends ran out of classroom right after the class ended. Su Menghan was hanging far behind and couldn't keep up and looked at them angrily and bitterly stamped her foot, while they ran out of the school.

Henceforth, a rumor spread throughout the Yan High School: Xiaohua Su Menghan had developed feelings for a guy called Ye Feng!

Regarding this rumor, Su Menghan naturally didn't mind. She thought that her father would be so happy once this rumor would reach his ears, and then perhaps she might not need that Ye Feng to accompany her when she would go to visit her grandmother. Anyway the rumor was not true, so why would she care?

Ye Feng and Ou B came running out of the school and saw three familiar fellows and abruptly stopped.

"Last time was enough for you guys?"

Ye Feng looked at the familiar three goons of Heavenly serpent gang and said loudly in a threatening manner.

Heavenly serpent gang was certainly persistent. But he could use this chance to make use of the golden leaf grass poison present in a small medicine bottle in his pocket.

Ye Feng had planned to first visit Ou B's house, then he would think about this Heavenly serpent gang matter.

Ye Feng and three goons of Heavenly serpent gang once again confronted each other near the school gate and the scene attracted the attention of many people who were expecting for this to happen sooner or later.

But the next scene totally stunned them all.

They saw that the three goons arrived in front of Ye Feng and shouted in unison: "Elder Brother Ye!"

Chapter 015 – Brother Tie Admires You

The three goons of Heavenly Serpent gang showed up suddenly that stunned the surrounding people.

Elder brother Ye?

Could it be that the last beating had taught them a lesson and unexpectedly turned them docile?

School gate security guard was in shock. Didn't they say that these three goons of Heavenly Serpent Gang were very aggressive and domineering? Who could dare to provoke them? But for some reason, after getting all beaten up by a student, the other party was still calling him 'Elder brother'?

Ye Feng was also in surprise for a moment after hearing this: "Playing tricks on me?"

"Elder Brother Ye, our boss, Brother Tie, appreciates you very much and wants to invite you to join our Heavenly Serpent Gang."

Although, their leader, that thin and tall goon, called him 'Elder Brother' but his attitude wasn't very respectful, he was still very arrogant and ill mannered: "As you know, our Heavenly Serpent Gang holds a very powerful position in this area, so by joining our gang, you will also become one of us."

Standing behind the thin and tall goon, those other two goons were present looking at Ye Feng with envy, jealousy and hatred. Obviously they called him ‘Elder Brother’ not because they wanted to, but they were commanded by their boss brother Tie to do so. If not done properly as instructed, their fate would definitely be miserable.

Fortunately, even if they were unable to complete the task of bringing Ye Feng earlier, as directed by Brother Tie, they still weren’t punished by him instead he had given all of the required medical expenses to them, making them dead set on being the members of the Heavenly Serpent gang.

“Hey Small bee” Ou B was in a state of shock and said while pulling the clothes of Ye Feng: “Probably it is worth giving a try?”

Actually, in Ou B’s opinion, being invited to the Heavenly Serpent Gang was already a bit too much. Not to mention, even after getting badly beaten up by Ye Feng, the other party still gave him an offer to join their gang, which was not the kind of treatment a normal human being could enjoy.

If he came to know that Ye Feng had also hit the face of Brother Tie’s younger brother with a brick then his reaction could be imagined.

Just when the surrounding people were very much expecting that Ye Feng would agree and would go with them to meet their boss, Brother Tie, suddenly the whole situation took a huge turn.

Ye Feng lifted his foot and once again kicked between the two legs of that thin and tall goon and whispered “To show up like this unexpectedly

in order to invite me and on top of that with such an annoying attitude, perhaps, you could have shown a little sincerity?”

It was a strong kick and when the tall and thin goon received the kick, he could only get enough time to scream pitifully and fainted immediately on the spot because of the severe pain.

At present, Ye Feng had five months of cultivation and his strength compared with his strength from yesterday morning had increased tremendously!

Ye Feng was aiming to control the entire Heavenly Serpent Gang, so how could he possibly go and work under that Brother Tie? One must know that Brother Tie was merely a small gang leader but Ye Feng's target was the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Ye Feng's action once again shocked the students present on the scene.

They looked at Ye Feng with their eyes wide open in astonishment. Was this violence actually needed? Those three men came here just to invite him to join the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but he actually kicked one of them so violently, wasn't he afraid that they would retaliate? That thin and tall goon was really pitiful, got kicked in his balls, and not just once but twice, this could be said as world's ultimate punishment.

“This boy is really daring!”

The remaining two goons looked at him with anger flashing in their eyes. This Ye Feng was unable to discriminate between good and evil,

wasn't he aware of the influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang?

“If you guys want to invite me to your gang, then your boss, Brother Tie, will have to come personally to invite me.”

Ye Feng said this in a casual manner, and just then, he kicked the other two goons one after another, making them fall on the ground crying in pain, after that, he left the school gate along with Ou B.

Everyone at the school gate saw the whole incident, how those three goons were kicked by Ye Feng and then how he left the school as if nothing happened and a thought suddenly appeared in their hearts: Recently, this Ye Feng had suddenly become quite Niubi. He was no longer that kid who used to play online games all the time!

Soon after they left, Su Menghan ran up to the school gate to catch them, but unfortunately, they had already gone far away which made her to bitterly stamp her foot on the ground. Then she saw those three goons on the ground, and suddenly, she made a guess about what must have happened here few minutes ago and was a bit startled in her heart. She thought that this Ye Feng fellow had become more and more reckless nowadays, and if this went on, then sooner or later, he would get caught in another incident.

Su Menghan was a very smart girl and after seeing the sudden change in her father's attitude towards Ye Feng, it didn't take her long to understand that Ye Feng's family was definitely quite influential, and that must be the reason why he got quickly released just after getting arrested for visiting a prostitute.

However, Heavenly Serpent gang was an underworld organization and was counted among one of the top three big gangs of Yanjing city! If someone tried to provoke them then it didn't matter how much influential his family background actually was, it would not protect him from getting shot and dying.

.....

“Small Bee.....your elder brother thinks that wouldn't it be appropriate to go back and apologize to them?”

Ou B was following Ye Feng and the more he was trying to feel relieved, he was getting more restless while talking to Ye Feng.

“No harm”

Ye Feng shook his head: “Very soon I will completely resolve this matter regarding Heavenly Serpent Gang, but for now, going to your house is more important.”

Ou B almost collapsed after hearing this carefree response from Ye Feng.

Even though Ye Feng was in such a terrible situation, how could he still keep on thinking about his family's high-quality goods? Although Ou B accepted that his family really possessed some very high-quality goods, but after provoking those gangsters of Heavenly Serpent Gang, how could he possibly think about enjoyment.

Although Ye Feng said that one day he would certainly resolve this issue related to the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but it didn't convince Ou B one bit. Speaking of which, it might happen that someday, this gang could be picked up by the first clan of Yanjing City named 'Lin Clan' to cooperate with them to deal with their personal matters, under that situation, how could Ye Feng possibly stand against the Heavenly Serpent Gang?

One must know that Lin Clan was the most powerful clan in the whole Yanjing city in terms of power and influence. Ye Feng had an influential background too, but when compared to the influence of Lin Clan, it didn't stand a chance.

“Come on, you shouldn't even think about dealing with the joint forces of both Heavenly Serpent Gang and Lin Clan.”

Ou B shook his head.

“Lin Clan?”

Ye Feng felt something very strange about it.

It reminded him that last night at Weiming Lake, his grandfather told him that he would introduce Ye Feng to the “granddaughter of the old man from Lin Clan”..... could it be that this was the same Lin Clan his grandfather was talking about?

Then suddenly, a second thought appeared in his mind that in China, there were several Lin Clans, so it was not such a big deal.

“Right, this Lin Clan is the first clan of Yanjing city and it is so powerful that its influence has proliferated into the three major fields, military, business and government.”

Ou B explained this then it seemed like he was lost in his thoughts and a yearning expression appeared on his face: “Anyway, I once saw a very beautiful woman of Lin Clan, ah I was really fortunate, she was such a beauty, very attractive, that figure, that face....”

“Well, we have finally arrived at your house.”

Ye Feng patted his shoulder and interrupted his imagination.

Ye Feng was not at all interested in hearing about some beauty of Lin Clan. It was very clear in his mind that whether it was the World of the Immortals or the Earth, at both places, strength was the most important thing. Without strength, how could you even stand confidently in front of a beautiful woman?

At this time, “the Oushi antique store” appeared in front of them. It was located in a street not far from the Yanshan High school.

“Dad, I am back.”

Ye Feng had interrupted Ou B’s beautiful dream, that was why he was not in a great mood, but he still shouted and ran inside the antique store. He and his father usually lived in this place.

“You wait here, I will go get something for you to have a look, oh right, what do you want to see, antiques from Europe and America, or Japan or South Korea?”

Ou B ran inside while asking.

“I am looking for some antiques, so go talk to your father.”

Ye Feng shook his head because he already knew that Ou B’s father was an unscrupulous businessman, in fact, he had come here prepared to be butchered.

“Boy, are you looking to buy some antiques?”

Ou B heard what his father said to Ye Feng and suddenly stopped then turned his head with a stunned look on his face.

He remembered that Ye Feng never had any interest in antiques and his mind was full of games! Over these last two days, something was not right with him. He didn’t even hear Ye Feng talking about games during this time.

Moreover, the price of the antiques was usually very high, especially in his family shop, because they mostly kept genuine things!

How could Ye Feng possibly afford to buy them?

Chapter 016 - Lin Clan's Sanshao

Not after a while, Ye Feng entered into the shop and saw Ou B's dad, Ou A.

He looked like an astute middle-aged man, a pair of his fox-like eyes was shinning like a profiteer, clad in a very ordinary dress short sleeved shirt and grey trousers, and there were 7-8 points which clearly showed the resemblance between him and Ou B.

To be honest, Ye Feng very much admired this family considering the fact that they had managed to gain such a wonderful reputation in just two generations.....

“You said that you are looking for some good antiques?”

Ou A was also a bit surprised like Ou B when he came to know about the purpose of Ye Feng coming to his antique store.

“Right.”

Ye Feng nodded his head then began to move forward to look around the store. Lobby of the shop was not very large and was stocked up with several porcelain antiques, each with ornamental value.

The moment he entered the shop lobby, he immediately started to

check the temperature of his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. Since the last time when he encountered that oval faced young girl, he was aware that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring had a basic function – treasure hunt.

When the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring would come in contact with the Lingqi then it would start to gradually emit heat, just like previous time during the golden leaf grass incident.

“Why do you want to buy antique goods?”

Ou A asked this straightforwardly, a high school student buying antiques, already it was not normal, not to mention he already knew that Ye Feng was not very rich, rather he was very poor, sometimes he used to skip classes to go to internet cafe, and for this, he usually asked Ou B to lend him money.

“Anyway, don’t stand idle and keep looking.”

Ye Feng certainly would not say that he came here looking for a Lingqi rich object, he smiled and said: “Consider that I want to buy something that strengthens body, keeps it healthy, and prolongs the life.”

His words did not lie, moreover there were indeed a good number of high-quality ancient jade items that held the function of strengthening the body and prolonging the life, so Ou A didn’t had any suspicions at what he said.

“Come inside, there are no good stuffs outside, you are my son’s classmate, I will not sham you.”

Saying this, Ou A guided him towards the inner hall.

This antique shop was divided into two halls, one was the lobby where majority of the things were of ornamental value, but their actual value was not as high as they appeared to be, it was because even if a customer didn't understand their value and broke them accidentally then it wouldn't be a huge loss.

As for the inner hall, most of the things were very expensive. Here things were perhaps not very attractive and pretty, but they were absolutely priceless!

Ou B was following Ye Feng and whispered: "Hey Small Bee....what do you actually want to buy?"

It could be said that previous Ye Feng never used to have much money on his hand, even if he got something out of some illegal business, it was impossible for him to actually spend it in buying antiques! According to previous Ye Feng's temperament, as long as he possessed wealth, he would waste it only on online games.

"Well, I haven't thought about it, it's for my grandfather."

Ye Feng noticed that Ou B was unwilling to give up so he used his grandfather as a shield to escape from his questions.

And it really became a very nice excuse, after that, Ou B didn't ask any questions, rather he started to sell things to Ye Feng: "Since you want to

buy something for your grandfather then look at this ancient Jade item, if worn by an old person like your grandfather then it will really give a very good effect on his health.”

Ye Feng smiled a bit then shook his head, the environment was quite gloomy, but the hall was very spacious, soon he got attracted by the dazzling antique products.

Oushi antique shop was indeed very famous in Yanjing city, there were lots of antique goods here making it worthy of its fame. Ye Feng looked around casually and saw lots of things of some obvious eras, and were being sold at thousands or hundreds of thousands or even more.

Of course, this was just a small antique shop and could not be compared with those large antique malls. Those large antique shops held antiques that were worth more than one million, Ou A couldn't place such high-valued things here in his small shop.

“Little Ou, you introduce the antiques to him.”

At this time, Ou A raised his head and looked at a relatively old clock on the wall: “I have to receive an honourable guest, hey.”

There was a very deceitful and self-satisfied look on his face making it obvious that the identity of this honoured visitor was very extraordinary.

“Go, I am more than enough for this.”

Ou B pulled Ye Feng without paying attention to Ou A who hurriedly

went outside, instead, he started introducing things to Ye Feng one by one that were placed there in the hall. Ye Feng looked at his eyes and chuckled in his heart, this boy grew up into a profiteer absolutely like his father.

Ye Feng listened to the introductions being given by Ou B, while paying attention to the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, but it hadn't responded at all throughout the time. After a while, they came in front of a counter, and inside, there was a delicate white jade yin yang fish which seemed quite extraordinary.

“Small Bee, this thing is very incredible and it's actually a new good that arrived just a while ago.”

Seeing this item, Ou B's mood suddenly picked up pace and he immediately started to give explanation about it, “It has a history of more than 1000 years. Moreover the material quality is insightful, excellent workmanship, and above all, it was deeply buried in the soil for over 1000 years but look how perfectly preserved it looks, there is not a slightest defect.....”

“What's the cost for this one?”

Ye Feng interrupted his endless explanation in a somewhat ridiculous way.

“The price should not be a problem.”

Ou B continued to grin and said: “The main point is that nowadays this

stuff has become very popular among old people and it is being worn a lot nowadays and it is best suited for them, therefore if you want to buy it for your grandfather, buy it absolutely without any doubt, even if you want to send it as a gift to someone, then also go for it.”

“What’s the cost?”

Ye Feng asked again.

“Well, dad once said that this thing could be worth 150,000, but if you really want to buy it, since we are friends so considering it, it can be priced cheaper for you...”

Ou B said in a somewhat awkward manner.

He was considering that once he would introduce such an expensive item to Ye Feng, he would finally get the response from Ye Feng that he did not have enough money. Since their childhood, for ten years, he had known about the situation of Ye Feng that he was actually quite poor, and living in a villa was only for show.

“So expensive? There are too many dark spots on it.”

Ye Feng gave a surprised look and thought that didn’t selling this type of damaged item for 150,000 seem too deceptive?

Certainly he was not at all interested in buying this white jade yin yang fish, but just now, he wanted to negotiate the price of this thing in order to mentally prepare himself. His Ancient Dragon Sword Ring didn’t react

in front of this white jade fish besides he too didn't feel any significant Lingqi around it, so he lost interest.

Seeing Ye Feng like this, Ou B felt somewhat helpless as he already knew that this was the case.

Just when he was about to give an explanation, suddenly, they heard a despising laughter coming from the outer hall: "Dislike expensive things? Good things are certainly going to be expensive. Boss, if there is any good stuff to introduce then you do it freely because as long as the stuff is good, money is not the issue!"

Who was so arrogant?

Ou B and Ye Feng both of them simultaneously turned their heads and saw a person accompanied by Ou A. He was wearing designer clothes, branded sunglasses, and on his left wrist, he was wearing a 5002 series of Patek Philippe wrist watch. Everything was exhibiting his honoured status.

Only the value of this watch was more than ten million CNY! (CNY is Chinese Yuan)

"Ha, ha, indeed, taking the broad view of the whole Yanjing city, who doesn't know about the extravagance of Lin Clan's Sanshao?" (Sanshao means third son)

Next to that youth, Ou A was standing and showing the look of an unscrupulous businessman and said with a smile: "Since an old friend

has introduced Sanshao to my shop, so I can't disappoint you can I?"

"That is natural."

The so-called Lin Clan's Sanshao nodded and gave a joyful smile: "Well, I don't have much time to spend, take your best stuff out."

"No problem Sanshao, first come and have a look at this white jade yin yang fish, it has been freshly unearthed and was found in the ruins of a Shang Dynasty ancient tomb, dating back to nearly five thousand years in the history....."

Ou A smiled, his eyes narrowed and took a crescent moon shape and he led Lin Clan's Sanshao towards the place where Ye Feng and Ou B were standing.

Chapter 017 - Spirit Stone

Did this Lin Clan's Sanshao actually belong to the number one clan of Yanjing city?

Ye Feng thought, looking at the sinister smile of Ou A, he knew that something was going on in his mind. He felt that Ou B wouldn't deceive him, then in that case, this white jade fish had a history of over 1000 years, but his father said over 5000 years.

Could it be that Ou A was planning to deceive Lin Clan's Sanshao?

“Half a month later, it's my grandfather's 70th birthday. In order to make him happy, even if it costs more money, that won't be a problem.”

Lin Clan's Sanshao said this with full of arrogance then followed Ou A.

He looked at Ye Feng with a despising look in his eyes, because at present, his eyes were selfishly focussing on that white jade yin yang fish that looked really beautiful and attractive!

Obviously, the way he was looking at that thing with was not at all similar to the way Ye Feng was looking at it.

Ou B took advantage of this situation and pulled Ye Feng away and ran to the side, then whispered: “Small Bee, you must not mess with this Sanshao of Lin Clan, let's go somewhere else to take a look at other things.”

Ye Feng nodded and followed him.

He certainly didn't think that he shouldn't mess with Lin Clan's Sanshao, but there was no need to do that, or else it would sound very impolite, to be honest he actually didn't care about the other party's identity or status one bit.

“His name is Lin Xiuwen. Remember what I said before about the Lin Clan of Yanjing City, he is ranked third among this generation of males of Lin clan.”

Far away, Ou B started giving introduction of Lin Clan's Sanshao. Ye Feng was only interested in playing online games and did not know about these matters, but fortunately, under the influence of his father, Ou B had come to know a lot about the upper level clans and influences of Yanjing city.

“He is the first year student of Yanshan University, his grandfather loves him the most, normally he is a very arrogant and domineering person, there is almost not a single person in the entire Yanjing city who dares to provoke him.....”

While giving details about the Lin Clan's Sanshao, Ou B was thinking, was it a good thing to give introduction about Lin Clan's Sanshao to Ye Feng?

At this time, both of them came to a corner, Ye Feng suddenly felt that the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring slightly heated up and started emitting warm rays of light, his heart trembled with excitement and he hurriedly

started looking around.

“Small bee, what’s wrong with you?”

Ou B noticed that something was strange, so he hastily asked.

Ye Feng didn’t respond, he kept on following the instruction given by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, and his eyes moved towards the corner of the hall, a large amount of junk goods were piled up there, apparently they were some unvalued and totally neglected goods.

Among them, there was a half fist-sized dark green stone that attracted the attention of Ye Feng.

Lingshi! (Spirit stone)

Unfortunately, there was only a half piece of it.

Ye Feng secretly sighed in his heart, it was such a pity then he moved forward to pick up that half piece of green stone and started sizing it up carefully.

“Don’t tell me you like this thing?”

Ou B looked at it in a strange manner then walked up to it and stated giving the introduction: “This thing came together with that white jade yin yang fish. Although it is very old, but only half of it could be recovered, so I don’t have any idea what this thing is, even though I have

already cleaned up this place, it is still here.”

“Since it is a useless thing, so might as well give it to me, right?”

Ye Feng tentatively asked.

If he had a chance to save money then he naturally must try to save, in any case, Ou B didn't know anything about this green stone.

Spirit stones were considered as rare practice resources in the world of cultivation and their first time use could considerably promote cultivation level. If used again, then it would only help in fast recovery of Xuan qi, but it was equally precious, because during the fighting, if Xuan qi was exhausted then presence of spirit stones could help a lot.

In the World of the Immortals, many big schools had started giving little amounts of spirit stones to some core disciples to help them with the initial phase in enhancement of their cultivation. As for this world's Ye Feng, this treatment never happened.

“Unfortunately, this is only half of a spirit stone.”

Ye Feng heaved a sigh inside his heart, this remaining half piece would begin to lose its Lingqi very soon, in fact, now, this half piece of spirit stone contained only one third of its total Lingqi.

“Give it to you? Then I think I will be killed by my father.”

Ou B refused him without any hesitation but his eyeball revolved once and shifted towards Ye Feng: “How much money do you have, might as well give it to me, let’s not haggle over it, or I will have to talk to dad regarding the pricing for this stone.”

Profiteers, two generations of profiteers!

Ye Feng just wanted to beat him up to death, however he had a cheque of 200,000 which he really wished to throw away, with that cheque he could easily buy that whole white jade yin yang fish, moreover, it was needless to say that an ordinary person wouldn’t pay even a single penny for this half piece of green stone.

“Only two hundred, I would like to buy it.”

Ye Feng pulled out the last 200 from his trouser’s pocket. It was given to him by his grandfather as this month’s living expense. Actually this month, he had received a lot of living expenses, but unfortunately, when he opened the room after arriving in this world, there only remained 200 to spend.

“What the hell!”

Ou B saw that and scolded him: “Your grandfather makes you buy antiques and gives only 200 to spend?”

“I don’t have any other option, or else why would I choose this stuff? It looks so ugly.”

Ye Feng shrugged. Ou B had inherited his father's profiteering traits, but it was quite clear that Ye Feng was not bad either!

"Well alright, let's finalize the deal for 200."

Ou B reluctantly nodded then took two bank bills from Ye Feng. Although he grew up with Ye Feng and their relationship was very strong, but his father had taught him since his childhood that when money was involved, even if he was dealing with his own blood related brother, he couldn't be careless and must clear the accounts properly!

Ye Feng kept that half piece of green stone in his pocket. Right now, he was quite impatient to go back quickly and absorb this half piece of spirit stone.

Although this remaining half piece contained just one third of original Lingqi content, but if it could be absorbed completely, he would be able to achieve one year worth of cultivation! By that time, he would barely be able to use agility martial arts and while facing firearms, probably, he would be able to barely escape the bullets.

In order to deal with the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, he certainly needed higher level of cultivation. The higher level cultivation was the better for his safety and survival.

"Then I should leave."

Now that the deal was done, Ye Feng wanted to leave right away.

“I’ll see you off.”

Ou B nodded.

They came to the lobby and found Lin Xiuwen had completed selecting things and was about to leave, only leaving behind a middle-aged attendant to swipe the card to pay money, another young attendant was also there carrying two beautifully wrapped boxes and several bags that were hanging on his shoulders, it seemed like he was having a tough time carrying all those stuff.

“Are all of these things purchased by Lin Xiuwen?”

Ye Feng looked at those things and thought, this Sanshao had actually purchased so many things, he was just like the core disciples of those big schools in the World of the Immortals, moreover he was also paying money to carry these stuffs rather than carrying them himself, he just selected things and left first, leaving everything else entirely to his personal attendants.

“Well, one of them is a vase, be careful, don’t break it.”

After making payment, that middle aged personal servant turned back and lifted one side of that tall blue and white porcelain vase, although that young attendant was already carrying lots of things, but he tried to reluctantly carry other side of that half-man sized blue and white porcelain vase.

Unfortunately that young attendant was not very skilled, he lifted that

half-man sized vase but he couldn't maintain his balance, and suddenly, the whole vase fell on the ground!

At that moment, coincidentally, Ye Feng and Ou B happened to pass through.

“Be Careful!”

Ou A had just now received money and was also present there. He couldn't help but shouted out loud.

Ou B did not react at all but Ye Feng subconsciously extended a hand to help in holding that blue and white porcelain vase.

Bang!

The sound of something falling on the ground and breaking into pieces echoed immediately, but it was not the vase that shattered, but a box that was there on the shoulder of that young attendant and it had fallen down, it was that white jade yin yang fish that had broken into two halves in an instant.

“What happened?”

Hearing the sound, the middle-aged personal servant turned back hastily and came back quickly to the other side to see what happened.

“This..... I didn't do anything, he is the one who broke this, he pushed

me!”

That young attendant helplessly said all of a sudden. He was scared and sweating all over, but suddenly, he got an idea and pointed his finger towards Ye Feng.

Chapter 018 - Triple Compensation

Ye Feng coldly looked at that young attendant, but he did not speak anything, he just steadily placed that vase on the floor.

“What’s the matter?”

The middle aged personal servant came back and said aggressively in a threatening manner, he bent to pick up that white jade Yin Yang Fish that had fallen and broken into two halves, his complexion changed, he looked at Ye Feng and said: “Boy, do you know how big a trouble you have put yourself in? Didn’t you know that this stuff belongs to none other than the Sanshao of Lin Clan?”

“Damn, it is obvious that your own guy is the one who broke it!”

Ou B saw other party making false accusation, and all of a sudden, his blood started boiling with anger, he pointed at that young attendant and started scolding him.

If it were not Ye Feng who came out of his way to help him, then not only that white jade Yin Yang Fish would have broken into pieces, but that Vase wouldn’t have survived either. Because of all these things, that poor young attendant was extremely scared, and out of fear, he was frightened to the point of peeing in his pants, at this time, he knew only one thing to push the blame on someone else.

“Without even investigating this thing properly, it is unfair to accuse an

innocent person like this.”

Ye Feng knitted his eyebrows and said.

“Accuse an innocent person you say? I tell you if this matter is not resolved today then no one will leave this place.”

Middle aged personal servant rolled up his sleeves, there was a bandit like expression on his face, he seemed very violent and fierce and it appeared from his action that he was ready to fight anytime.

Seeing this situation, Ou A hurriedly came over to smooth things over and said: “I will compensate for this loss! If Sanshao wants, he can go inside right away to select some other things and I won’t charge any money this time!”

At this time, Ou A was looking at them waiting for a reply, but these were the people of Lin Clan’s Sanshao, how could they be reasonable? Would they tell their boss the truth, the genuine reason? The right thing to do under such a situation was to quickly extend an offer to give compensation to the shopkeeper but that young attendant placed the blame on Ye Feng and continued staring at him.

The whole incident took place in Oushi Antique Store, he had no option but to consider Ye Feng or else the Lin Clan’s Sanshao would probably put Ye Feng to death in secret!

“It is not so easy, let’s see how our Sanshao plans to deal with this matter.”

Middle-aged personal servant gave out a cold humph then pulled out his phone and dialled a number. Lin Clan's Sanshao had left the store already after selecting the desired things. So, there was no other option left except using phone call to get in touch with him.

However, would Ye Feng allow himself being treated unjustly?

Seeing that the other party was being persistently unreasonable, Ye Feng moved forward, he wanted to beat up that middle aged personal servant, at this time, speaking nonsense with him was completely a waste of time, the only solution to this situation was a solid punch.

While on the other side, Ou B was already prepared to calm down the suddenly angered Ye Feng, seeing his violent form, he rushed towards him and pulled him back: "Small Bee, don't be impulsive, just leave this matter to my Dad, don't interfere."

Ou A was also on his side, he patted Ye Feng's shoulder to calm him down. Ye Feng looked into his eyes and saw care for him that moved his heart and decided to listen to him and not to act rashly.

"What a spoiled person you are. Not only have you broken our stuff but you also dare to fight back?"

That middle aged personal servant sneered, and at this time, the phone call got connected, and it did not take him too long to report the whole circumstance to the other side, and then got the reply from Lin Clan's Sanshao.

“Triple compensation, then consider this matter as over.”

Hearing this, Ou A finally heaved a sigh of relief, it would be good as long as Lin Clan's Sanshao didn't investigate into this matter.

“Well, you guys are lucky today since Sanshao is in a good mood, otherwise this wouldn't have been so simple.”

The middle aged personal servant hung up the phone then coldly glared at Ye Feng.

Ye Feng kept on watching everything from the sidelines, he still wanted to grab and smash him badly, but taking many aspects into consideration, he endured it after all hitting Lin clan's people in the Oushi Antique Store would also involve Ou B into this matter as he was his close friend.

However, in his heart, Ye Feng had already created an impression of Lin Clan which was extremely bad, the middle aged personal servant thought that Ye Feng's life had been saved, what he didn't know that it was actually him who was spared by Ye Feng and this was just because Ye Feng looked into Ou A's eyes and refrained from being violent.

“Triple compensation should be no problem.”

Ou A still had a smile on his face, and like before, he ran to the side to begin the process, not only he just finished the whole process very soon, but also helped them in carrying the other antiques to the white van

standing outside, then they drove away.

“Uncle Ou, today, I would have made sure they crawled out of this shop.”

Ye Feng looked at the departing opposite party and said with a cold humph.

“Crawl my ass, if you had tried to be impulsive then back luck would have befallen you, not them.”

Ou B scolded him: “In the whole Yanjing city, who doesn’t know about the bad reputation of Lin clan’s Sanshao, if you dare to anger him then that means you are courting death! He would do anything to kill you!”

Ye Feng heard that but he wasn’t in the mood to give any explanation, he immediately cupped his hands and said to Ou A: “I have put Uncle Ou in trouble so this younger generation should better say goodbye now.”

“No need to be so anxious, why don’t you first have dinner with us before going?”

Ou A gave a very passionate invitation to him, his eyes were shinning because he heard Ye Feng referring to himself as ‘younger generation’ while saying goodbye, which was definitely not the way modern people talked these days.

“No, it’s fine.....right, Uncle Ou, you paid triple compensation just now, how much did you pay?”

Ye Feng thought for a second then asked this.

“Not much, it was just three million.”

Ou A waved his hand casually, the air around him gave this feeling that the amount of three million was not worth mentioning at all.

Ye Feng's whole body got covered in cold sweat after hearing the amount of three million, Uncle Ou really was a big profiteer, he actually sold an item of 150,000 for one million, that Sanshao of Lin Clan was really a very foolish person, or maybe he simply had too much money that he didn't care? However, Uncle Ou really was quite courageous to actually defraud the Sanshao of Lin clan.

“Well Uncle Ou, now I owe you three million, I will definitely repay it in the future.”

Ye Feng nodded and said, he was confident that as per his ability, he would certainly earn three million in the future. This sentence was heard by both the father and son but didn't sound very reliable to them.

“Just, don't mention about this matter again.”

Ou A waved his hand: “As the saying goes, saving someone's life is like a victory, just like making a seven-story pagoda, today three million has rescued your life, which is very cost-effective. Right, I forgot to ask, what did you buy today?”

“Dad, it is that half piece of green stone.”

Ou B described the appearance of that half piece of spirit stone.

“What! Brat, how much did you sell it for?”

Ou A was startled and immediately asked.

“Two hundred.....”

Ou B said in a somewhat guilt-filled tone and looked scared.

“I will kill you prodigal son!”

Suddenly, Ou A turned extremely angry, he didn't attend to Ye Feng, however he caught Ou B and started scolding him: “Just a few days ago, I contacted an old friend of mine and convinced him to come and help me in its appraisal, how could you sell it.....”

“Dad, didn't you say that this item was useless?”

Ou B brought him into an inconvenient situation.

“Humph.”

Ou A didn't argue with him rather he turned towards Ye Feng and said: “Ye Feng, how about you give me that stone? You go inside once again

and pick something else.”

Ye Feng looked at his reaction and was already feeling strange in his heart. Perhaps, Ou A had correctly guessed the function of spirit stone? Anyway, he wouldn't return this half piece of spirit stone at any cost, because for him, its value was far more than three million.

“Uncle Ou, the younger generation has obligation and reason to listen to you, but this thing is really very useful to me, I cannot return it to you, still I hope you will excuse me.”

Ye Feng shook his head, “You want it back from me but Uncle Ou is a senior businessman and should not go back on a promise, right?”

“Ahem.”

Ou A was somewhat embarrassed, but he very quickly resumed his normal self, it seemed like he was thinking something: “Since it is like this, then Uncle Ou won't force you. Right, half a month later, there is going to be an antique trade fair in Langfang, are you interested in it?”

Chapter 019 - I Curse You That You Never Get A Wife

“Antique trade fair?”

Ye Feng gawked, for what reason the other party invited him to go.

“Yes.”

Ou A said in a somewhat mysterious way: “It’s going to take place on a very large scale, not only this, but probably, you may find many important personalities there, the people who are usually very hard to see on normal occasions.”

People who are usually hard to see?

Ye Feng knitted his eyebrows as he didn’t understand the meaning hidden in Ou A’s words.

“Alright, if you want to go then I will manage to get a letter of invitation for you, and perhaps you can find something beneficial from that trade fair.”

Ou A smiled while waving his hand, after that, he didn’t say anything.

Ye Feng looked at Uncle Ou and his heart was moved a bit, Uncle Ou was a very nice and sophisticated person, but come to think of it, he

shouldn't have noticed Ye Feng's identity as someone from the world of the Immortals right?

No, definitely not. Inferring from the spirit stone, Ou A might be considering him as a martial art practitioner. It was not difficult to notice from his actions that he was actually a martial artist.

“Well, then I will be troubling you Uncle Ou.”

Ye Feng nodded, he didn't point out anything. But he was still very much interested in that trade fair and asked: “Right, Uncle Ou, do you know where headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang is located or where can I find their boss?”

He had already decided to absorb the spirit stone tonight and then he would go deal with the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Small bee, what are you planning to do?”

Ou B's complexion suddenly changed, if Ye Feng was asking about headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang then he was surely planning to cause trouble, had he gone completely insane?

“Headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang is located at Tianhua casino but I don't know about the whereabouts of the gang boss.”

Ou B noticed that his father was not like his usual self, he was very calm, and on top of that, he was helping Ye Feng by telling him about the location of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Dad what are you...?”

Ou B was staring at his father and thinking, why did his dad tell Ye Feng everything, wouldn't it be like he was leading Ye Feng towards his death?

“Thank you so much Uncle Ou, I will take my leave now, goodbye.”

Ye Feng cupped his fists to salute Uncle Ou, he then patted Ou B's shoulder with a smile and left. He was going back to start his cultivation process and then he had planned to go to Tianhua casino to have a look and find Heavenly Serpent Gang's boss, and once found, he would quickly put him under control using the poison!

“Dad, you are really strange today.”

Ou B helplessly shook his head while looking at the leaving figure of Ye Feng.

“A little brat like you won't understand.”

Ou A scolded him: “If your father is not mistaken, then he should be a person, who practices martial arts, are you still worried about him?”

“Practices martial arts?”

Ou B gawked, he obviously didn't understand anything.

“Yes, that’s right. Do you know what that green stone is?”

Ou A complexion gradually became dignified.

“What is that green stone?”

Ou A asked in a curious tone.

“From the shape, it is probably a spirit stone, desired by martial artists.”

Ou A solemnly said: “In the beginning, I didn’t know a thing about its importance, but last time I had a discussion with my old friend about this stuff, we talked about many stuffs related with martial arts. Talking about the value of a spirit stone, it is at least one hundred million!”

“Hundred million! You are lying and doesn’t that mean we just had a huge loss?”

Just by listening this, Ou B suddenly jumped up to go and stop Ye Feng.

“Have you lost your mind?”

His profiteer dad exploded suddenly and hit on his head, he scolded him and said: “If it’s really true, then Ye Feng is definitely a martial arts practitioner, that boy may actually be very strong and influential,

remember to maintain a good relationship with him.”

Ou B foolishly asked “What is this martial arts stuff anyway? Don’t tell me it’s like what appears in TV, like they can fly in the sky, walk on water?”

“Even I do not know concretely about it, in short, it is something very extraordinary.”

Ou A smiled and said “Last time when I went to Langfang, there, my old friend recommended me to go to this fare to sell that spirit stone. However, now I don’t need to go, so take the invitation letter along with you and give it to Ye Feng in the school.”

As a businessman, it was essential to be quick witted to observe people’s every action. Ou A had already noticed a huge change in the current Ye Feng in comparison with how he used to be. So, he took this countermeasure.

He listened to that old friend saying that each and every martial arts user was a very honourable person because these people were not found easily in this common world. Even the Lin Clan of Yanjing City couldn’t dare mess with them!

Just now, Ou A was not at all afraid for Ye Feng during Lin Clan’s Sanshao incident, rather he was taking advantage of the situation to show Ye Feng about his concern & feelings for him. As a businessman, such an investment was nothing, let alone, the other party was his son’s best friend.

Very soon, the so called no-good Ye Feng was going to bring a turning point for this Ou Family in their growth and success.

.....

Ye Feng spent his last cash in taking a taxi to return to the ‘Qingfeng Park’ villa district. He already had a rough idea that Ou A must have guessed his identity already.

“So according to this logic, at this trade fair, it is most likely that a lot of martial artists are going to be present there, including.....”

He thought of that oval faced young girl from the last time as well as his mysterious and elusive grandfather. His grandfather hadn’t told him anything regarding martial arts. Rather he wanted him to lead a stable life. He was no longer that old Ye Feng, how could the current Ye Feng stay calm and lead a stable life with his attitude and temperament?

Even if he couldn’t go back to the world of the Immortals, so what, he should mix in this world as fast as possible!

“Ye Feng! Take me to Langfang!”

He just wanted to go back to his villa, but suddenly, he heard a very pleasant oriole-like sound coming from the next door, it was his school’s Xiaohua, Su Menghan.

Ye Feng saw that Su Menghan was actually calling his name from her balcony on the second floor. She was in white one piece dress and looked

very elegant and beautiful.

He didn't pay attention to her and went straight towards his villa.

“Ye Feng! Take me to Langfang!”

Su Menghan seeing him leaving quickly shouted once again.

Ye Feng patiently replied: “I plan to go there two weeks from now, you can come along if you want.”

“Really? Don't lie to me!”

Su Menghan was surprised for a moment but then she became extremely happy. She thought that Ye Feng would instantly reject her request once again.

“Why would I lie to a little girl?”

Ye Feng laughed out loud then finally went back to his villa and closed the door with a “bang”.

Still standing on the second floor's balcony, she was extremely happy at this moment. Although she didn't know why Ye Feng came back home this late, but since he was taking her to Langfang, it was more than enough for her.

She just wanted to visit her grandmother at any cost. Although she didn't like Ye Feng, but just the thought of seeing her grandmother had made her extremely happy.

However, he called her a little girl?

Su Menghan could not help but lowered her head and glanced at her own plump bosom and angrily said: "Who is a little girl, you jerk? I curse you that you never get a wife!"

Ye Feng, who had just now returned to his bedroom, sneezed.

"Who cursed me behind my back? Well, forget about it, now I have finally obtained a spirit stone after such a huge difficulty, I must make the best use of time to enhance my strength."

He got up and drew all the curtains in the bedroom, and without eating meal or taking shower, he immediately sat on the bed and took out that half piece of spirit stone.

A complete spirit stone could have promoted his cultivation up to three to five years in one fell swoop. However, the spirit stone he had now in his hand contained just one third of its original Lingqi content, so it could promote only up to one year of cultivation.

Absorbing such a kind of spirit stone enhanced cultivation only once in a lifetime. However, because the current Ye Feng had only five months of cultivation, and at present, he had no sense of security, so he didn't mind using it.

Human beings were very fragile, they could die in an accident while walking on the road, they could choke to death while eating or drinking, Ye Feng did not want to live as such a fragile creature in this world.

Chapter 020 - Sword

At nightfall.

Ye Feng sat on the bed while holding the half Spirit stone in his hand, he then started absorbing the Lingqi present in that stone. Not only his cultivation was growing rapidly because of the absorption of Lingqi but the meridians inside his body were also getting stronger simultaneously.

The core dan in his body was absorbing the Lingqi continuously from that spirit stone. Once the absorption process ended he would become a truly strong martial artist. Just like that oval faced girl or other martial artist who had absorbed Lingqi to attain such kind of well-known power and strength, similarly he would attain the same kind of power but since he had only half piece of spirit stone so he would attain half the amount of zhen qi.

“The meridians inside my body are not very strong so they can only hold cultivation for maximum three to five years. Seems like time is needed to work hard to broaden the meridians in order to enhance the limit of the cultivation..... “

Only the thick and strong meridians could contain more zhen qi and for longer period of time.

One year four months!

Close to the midnight, the time finally arrived when his cultivation rose

to a brand new height and this happened when that half piece of green stone which was in the hand of Ye Feng suddenly turned into powder.

Just to check his strength, he pounded a fist conveniently in the air, and from the flow of the air, he felt a massive explosive power coming out from his fist!

If a punch of an adult male could produce a force of 150 kg, then at present, the current Ye Feng's Bagua boxing had already become almost double, reaching 300 Kg. It was because not only the Bagua boxing technique was itself very stronger but also the style and moves of this technique were exquisite. This boxing technique was actually one of the basic fighting techniques of the World of the Immortals, here on the Earth, it was working wonderfully.

“But unfortunately no matter how strong the power of the fist is, it still cannot stop bullets.”

Ye Feng was already aware of this fact, therefore after being familiar with his current strength, he was now completely prepared to practice the agility technique again that he had once practiced in the previous world, it was called – rapid shadow immortal trace.

In the world of martial arts, only the fastest couldn't be defeated. The same was true in the World of the Immortals as well. There, each and every single person was very much focussed on practicing agility techniques. And Ye Feng's master, Ice Fairy, had taught him a superior agility technique.

He searched a bit in his memory and finally came to the conclusion

that there was a similar type of martial arts practiced in this world called surging waves micro step, but it had only scratched the surface and couldn't be compared with 'rapid shadow immortal trace' of the World of Immortals.

“To reach the highest level of this technique 'rapid shadow immortal trace' at least five years of cultivation is needed. If I practice now, perhaps I will have to finish it in haste for quicker results. However as long as it can be used at crucial moments, it can save my life

A thought started running in his mind, he recalled the display method of 'rapid shadow immortal trace' then congealed zhenqi in the meridians throughout his body and started circulating it in his two legs, agglomerating in the key position unceasingly, then suddenly erupted it!

Instantaneously, his figure moved a few steps forward leaving behind a faint afterimage!

“Not bad.”

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction then he stopped suddenly and noticed that the meridians in his both legs were little sore. Obviously in a short period of time, if he repeated this move once again then it would certainly be dangerous for him. The current Ye Feng could perform the 'rapid shadow immortal trace', but only for few seconds. Once his cultivation would reach a certain height then he could use this technique for a longer period of time.

“From the point of view of this world, using 'rapid shadow immortal trace' to run means covering 100 meter in just three seconds, dodging

bullet is very easy now.....”

Ye Feng finally had the self-confidence. But still, it was a temporary measure to escape one time. If the other party would keep on firing openly then he would certainly be in a tragic situation.

As for the open fire, he should have an anti-bullet defence technique?

This was also not the matter he should think of.

At this time, he raised his hand to accept that he was satisfied now, but suddenly, he felt slight cold in his finger in which he had worn that Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and then it started bursting out one after another.

“What’s going on?”

Ye Feng’s facial expression suddenly changed. This was his first time facing such a kind of situation. Actually the zhenqi circulating in his meridians were being absorbed by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, gradually condensed and after that, it gushed out suddenly.

Bang!

After a light sound, a red light appeared from his ring and filled his entire bedroom, it was shining blood red!

Ye Feng opened his eyes and looked at the thing in his hand, with a

somewhat inconceivable look on his face.

“This isa sword?”

His whole body's zhenqi had been absorbed by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, a hilt also originated from the ring, and at this moment, a sword made up of red zhenqi was grasped by him in his hand.

Ye Feng never thought that after absorbing his zhenqi, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring would actually transform into a zhenqi sword, however, it would be scary to bring out this stuff on the streets.

It was blood-red in colour, like a pure condensation, formed by the zhenqi, flashing red light which appeared to be branching off a little bit, and it looked very sharp as well.

Ye Feng waved the red zhenqi sword a little and it easily cut through the villa's beautifully tiled walls, and left behind a deep gully, which looked very grim.

So sharp?

Bang!

He used his intention to recover the zhenqi from the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the red blade suddenly disappeared, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring also returned to normal.

“Taking it out and putting away so freely?”

This phenomenon made him very happy and he still wanted to try once again, but found out that the remaining amount of his zhenqi was actually not enough to conjure a red zhenqi sword.

Such a weapon was an absolutely killing artefact. It was a dark and stormy night, Ye Feng was planning to go to the Tianhua casino in search of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang and having this killer weapon gave several points of assurance to him.

Since the loss of zhenqi was very serious, he could only rest for a while, in the midnight, he finally left the villa and went towards the Tianhua casino.

Although this time, ordinary people were already asleep, but in places like Tianhua Casino, nightlife had only just begun! Ye Feng now had a perfect opportunity.

.....

At this point, in the Tianhua Casino.

In an elegant compartment, many persons were sitting and drinking together, while several females in exposing outfits were sitting beside men and mooching off money in a variety of ways.

One of these men was Tian Youliang.

“Dad, since Brother Tie has already said it then we do not have to worry anymore, cheers!”

Tian Youliang had bleached hair and was wearing a leather jacket, giving him the appearance of a punk, but a middle-aged man was sitting next to him, appropriately dressed, western-style clothing with leather shoes and tie, this was Tian Youliang’s father and Blue sky advertising company’s boss, Tian Zhongkai.

“Indeed, cheers! Brother Tie, I will trouble you with this matter.”

Tian Zhongkai raised his glass and said to a brawny guy, sitting opposite to him and was wearing sunglasses and laughing. This time, he spent money because he wanted to give that kid, Ye Feng, a painful lesson. He also inquired and found out that there was no small enmity between Ye Feng and Heavenly Serpent Gang’s Brother Tie.

That brawny guy was wearing sunglasses and his nose was wrapped in a layer of gauze, obviously had been injured recently, it was actually Brother Tie.

“Humph, rest assured. I invited that guy but he disrespected me, does he think this Brother Tie will forgive him? This time, if I don’t cripple him then my name is not Brother Tie!”

Brother Tie coldly snorted, but in his words, the hatred for Ye Feng was clearly apparent. Even crueller things than breaking someone’s leg was nothing to him.

Brother Tie thought that Ye Feng was a high school student but actually dared to use a brick to smash his nose, but also on several occasions, he repeatedly beat his three younger brothers, even when they went to invite him to join their gang, Ye Feng simply rejected his offer. For him, this was undoubtedly a great insult.

Tian Youliang hugged a plentiful beautiful woman and kept on rubbing her ample breasts and was self-satisfied in his heart.

Thinking that now at the school forum, the discussion about his long tail must be going on, he could not help but feel ashamed. He did not know how it happened, but he always felt that it was related to Ye Feng.

While they continued to drink, soon, they started discussing a cruel plan regarding Ye Feng, but no one knew that at this time, Ye Feng had taken the initiative to come towards the Tianhua Casino.

Chapter 021 - Ye Feng Attacks

Tianhua Casino was situated in the most conspicuous place on the bar street. It was not very far away from Qingfeng Park.

In a while, Ye Feng finally arrived at the Tianhua Casino and quickly summed up the trump cards he had right now: First was “Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace” which could be used to escape at the critical moment; second one was “Ancient Dragon Sword Ring” that could turn into a double edged red colored sword after absorbing his zhenqi , it was very sharp and matchless and could be used several times during the fight; third was the poison which was made up of the golden leaf grass and was there to be used to control the main boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

However there was a problem, Ye Feng must find the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang first to use the poison on him. He had heard that this boss was a very fierce bald person having a knife cut scar on his face. Fighting with this man was very dangerous which could lead to one’s death, but for Ye Feng, as long as he would find the boss, he didn’t need to worry about subduing him.

Before coming here, he already made this very clear that which area was under the influence of the Heavenly Serpent Gang and that was the north eastern part of Yanjing City keeping in mind that Yanjing University was at the centre.

Located on the bar street, Tianhua Casino was actually the headquarters of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was said that each and every group boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang would show up here. However, no matter what, Ye Feng still had to go to this place to check the details.

“If I can bump into someone who guides me in the Tianhua Casino, it would be good.”

Ye Feng thought about that Brother Tie, as a group boss, there was a high possibility that he knew about the whereabouts of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang. However, meeting him by chance wouldn't be that easy.

When he walked into the bar street, he saw that it was very lively as usual, nobody cared about his clothing, he looked like a simple boy. After a while he arrived at the golden and jade green gate of the casino, he looked up and saw “Tianhua Casino” written in large characters and was shining golden bright, demonstrating luxury.

He walked into the casino very calmly. Nobody stopped him however some people obviously noticed him. They could figure out very easily that he was a student who had entered this place and it was a matter of surprise for some of them.

Casino was very crowded, people were moving continuously, Ye Feng had just now entered the casino and felt that the atmosphere was fiery, he gave a quick glance around to observe the situation.

Before he could look around, he suddenly heard a loud shout coming from his front side: “It's that guy, catch him!”

Ye Feng heard this and a cold feeling appeared in his heart, he looked up and saw two goons and immediately recognized that they were actually two of the three goons, who were with Brother Tie last time, and

were going to rape Su Menghan back then, in that alley.

Those two goons were coming out of the elevator, they immediately recognized Ye Feng and without wasting a single moment they rushed towards him to catch him. This attracted the eyes of people who were present there.

“Hey, grandson, want to catch me?”

Ye Feng wasn't afraid at all, instead the corners of his mouth curled up as he taunted one of them. He then ran towards the area with few people were standing in order to make space for the upcoming fight. His figure was matchless and very agile!

“Chase!”

Both of the goons chased after him without a slightest hesitation, there were fierce looks on their faces. They thought that this boy was really extremely daring, not only he offended Brother Tie but he also dared to come to the Tianhua Casino, was it like he came here to court death at his own initiative?

They didn't think that a single high school student could become a threat to them, although they had already heard that he could fight well, but he was still nothing when comparing with Brother Tie, who was simply like the gold medallist goon of the Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Although the Tianhua Casino was the headquarters of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but it was not like the men of this gang were present

everywhere around this casino. So Ye Feng ran all the way to the restroom since there was no one to stop him and occasionally he kept on kicking away few small goons who were trying to come in his way.

He ran inside the restroom.

Seeing this those two goons became very happy, they thought that since he had entered the restroom, now there was no way for him to escape from inside.

But when those two men crashed inside the restroom, the next thing that they saw a big fist, which was as fast as the lightning. The goon who was in the front didn't even get the time to respond. Ye Feng punched directly on his chest, "Kacha" a sound of the broken ribs rang out and that goon flew backward and knocked down the second goon who was standing behind him.

Ye Feng threw a solid punch to finish that gold medallist goon of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. His punch had the strength of 300 kg, how could an ordinary person possibly withstand it? It was good that the goon's physical strength was better than an ordinary person, or else that punch was quite enough to kill a normal person very easily.

However, even so, that goon had lost his battle efficiency already by just a single punch. Ye Feng moved forward towards the second goon who was knocked down but he wasn't severely injured. Ye Feng coldly said: "Take me to your boss or else your fate will be just like his."

The man struggled a bit, however that was of no use, he barely turned to his one side to take a look of his companion. What he actually saw was

his companion's chest had been destroyed completely. His eyes were rolled up, had also vomited blood and had already passed out long ago.

This Ye Feng's single punch could make me like this?

Suddenly that man started sweating, just a moment ago he had been knocked down which was a little painful, now he could easily infer that how strong Ye Feng's fist actually was.

Could it be that he was a young Tyson?

That goon used to worship the matchless boxing king "Tyson". Ye Feng and Tyson were very different. But now actually it was not possible to compare the strength of these two men since they were at the same level of strength!

"Boss... is.. on the sixth floor."

He replied in a somewhat stammering way, he, as the gold medallist goon of this gang, had been assigned to do a very important work and that was to take care of the protection and safety of the each and every group bosses of the Heavenly Serpent gang, for him to know the whereabouts of the boss was not at all surprising.

He was not at all afraid that Ye Feng was looking for his boss since he knew that his boss had a gun, no matter how powerful this Ye Feng was, he won't be able to kill the boss.

Ye Feng then tied his hands with a black handkerchief, that goon had a

very fierce expression on his face although Ye Feng's hands looked like the hands of a boy but still that goon didn't dare to resist.

Very obediently he led Ye Feng, they passed through few people and then from the stairs they reached the sixth floor of the Tianhua Casino.

Ye Feng carefully observed and discovered that there were many cameras in the corridor. He secretly pondered in his heart, if he did not manage to poison the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang and if he could not put him under control then this would cause a big trouble for him in the future.

Tianhua Casino's sixth floor.

This was the place where all the elites of the Heavenly Serpent Gang were present, and during this period, in that room, almost everyone was embracing a woman for their enjoyment. Ye Feng together with that goon whose hands were tied with a black handkerchief passed through the corridor without paying any attention to those people.

Finally they arrived at the entrance of the most luxurious passenger compartment. The goon moved forward one step and knocked the door rhythmically.

Thump! Thump! Thump! Thump!

"Come in."

From inside a middle aged man's voice resounded and there was no

sentiment in his voice.

“Well, if only I had Shen records.”

Ye Feng thought in his heart that if he had waited ten years to develop his cultivation to practice the technique “Yinshen”, then under this situation he would have been able to sense everything even there would be any slightest sign of trouble, he could even investigate everything inside the room from outside the walls.

That goon slowly opened the door and made a gesture of invitation to Ye Feng, hinting him to enter the room.

Ye Feng looked at him coldly and noticed that the other party was exhibiting an expression of panic from his face, however by looking in his eyes, there was a touch of malice in them.

“Trap?”

Ye Feng’s mind was very alert, he walked into the room proudly by holding up his head.

The moment he went in: “Bang” a gunshot occurred!

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Ye Feng was already well prepared, he had already condensed zhenqi in his legs and instantaneously moved forward leaving behind a faint

blurred afterimage and thus dodged the bullet clearly!

He quickly observed the situation in the room and saw a knife cut scarred face, bald man holding a pistol in his hand and exhibiting a fiery expression from his face. And next was a very beautiful flirtatious woman wearing a very sexy dress, leaning on his body, her sexy and attractive body was mostly exposed.

Both of them saw how Ye Feng dodged the bullet instantaneously and were extremely shocked by this sudden movement of Ye Feng!

But Scarred bald man was indeed worthy of being called the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. Without any hesitation, he wanted to continue facing Ye Feng by shooting at him one after another. But all of a sudden he noticed that Ye Feng appeared right in front of him unexpectedly and instantaneously!

Chapter 022 - Invisible Kill

Even if the “Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace” could be used only for a moment, it was quite enough for Ye Feng to cover a distance of twenty meters in an instant and arrive in front of the scarred face bald man directly from the door.

The moment that scarred face bald man wanted to pull the trigger again, Ye Feng came up with his fist, he punched the gun and it flew away. He then hit the chest of that flirtatious woman, meanwhile he started condensing his whole body’s zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

Bang!

The red light flashed. Without giving any warning the red colored Qi condensed double-edged sword emerged suddenly and in a just one stroke it pierced through the chest of that flirtatious glamorous woman!

Woman was staring with her eyes wide open, since she had been following Scarred face bald man so she had seen the deaths of lots of people, even she had personally killed a person by her own hands. But she had never thought that her death would come so quickly.

Along with that woman who collapsed on the floor after losing her strength, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring resumed itself instantly, it had killed a person invisibly! While the other hand of Ye Feng had still grabbed the bald man’s neck tightly.

Although that scarred face bald man was standing close to Ye Feng, but he didn't see anything clearly how Ye Feng killed that woman!

The appearance of that scarred face bald man was somewhat like – his nasal bone was straight, the lower jaw was upright, the edges and corners were very sharp, a startling scar of knife wound extending all the way from the right eye to the left corner of the mouth, he looked very aggressive and matchless, like a brave warrior.

Even if someone was just killed in front of him, it was hard to deter such a character.

“Eat it.”

Ye Feng pulled out the jet black pill that was made of the golden leaf grass and forced it in the mouth of that scarred face bald man, he didn't pay attention to anything, just patted twice on his back and made the pill slide directly in his belly.

“Who are you! What have you forced me to eat?”

The scarred face bald man gritted his teeth and asked.

“Soon you'll know.”

Ye Feng smiled and finally loosened the neck of opposite party then waved his hands with ease. When he looked at the glamorous woman who was lying on the ground, he saw that the blood was gushing out of her half-naked chest, but he didn't pay any attention to that instead he

slipped to the side where pistol had fallen. This attracted the attention of that scarred face bald man.

If Ye Feng had been slow just a moment ago and had given the chance to the other party to start firing gun then he would have been trapped in a very dangerous situation. But fortunately the Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was unexpectedly amazing which stunned the opposite party for a moment.

At this time the zhenqi present in Ye Feng's body had almost exhausted. While on the other side that scarred face bald man wasn't able to withstand all this. Not only his attack was completely dodged by Ye Feng but also the pill inside his belly had started to attack suddenly. Not a slightest bit of strength left in his body and even more his whole body was in sharp pain and it was all happening because of that black coloured pill.

Ye Feng without paying any attention to him went forward to pick up the pistol. He picked it up then started playing with it but then suddenly he raised it and aimed at the entrance: "Come in, shut the door."

That black handkerchief goon opened the door and remained there standing completely stunned by seeing the condition of the room, the boss was actually subdued in just few seconds?

Just now what was that blurred afterimage thing left behind by that boy? And how did he escape the bullet?

The black handkerchief goon was somewhat confused and couldn't believe what he just saw was true or just an illusion. But at this time Ye

Feng's gun was pointed at him and he had no other choice but to go inside.

When he saw the sight of that glamorous woman lying on the ground all bleeding then he didn't have any doubt left that if he would try to run away from him right now then Ye Feng would not hesitate a bit and shoot him. As he already knew that like Ye Feng, he didn't possess any such kind of ability to escape the ferocity of a bullet. Hence he had no option left than to submit to him.

The black handkerchief goon finally stepped into the room and closed the door conveniently.

Ye Feng keenly focussed on the other party's body movement and what he discovered was that while closing the door the other party was making some hand signals towards outside. Ye Feng narrowed his eyes and said.

“Well, don't play any tricks or else you will die.”

The pistol was in Ye Feng's hand so he felt relieved. He turned back and gave a quick look to the scarred face bald man and what he noticed was that his whole body had curled up into a ball, he was constantly shaking, apparently he was being tortured extremely by that pill but still he never groaned, obviously it was due to his firm willpower.

“Good, now get up.”

Ye Feng stepped forward and casually kicked his foot, while kicking him he channelized his zhenqi in his kick and transferred it secretly into

the body of the scarred face bald man. By doing so, he suppressed the efficacy of that drug for a temporary period.

“Later you will need to see me once in every week otherwise the efficacy of that drug will break out in your whole body, the maximum time limit you will get then to resist it is one hour after that you will lose your life. I am called Ye Feng, going to be your boss in the future, of course from behind the scenes.”

Hearing this made him scared and he started sweating. He barely held the table to stand up.

He raised his head and looked at Ye Feng, while gritting his teeth tightly, he said: “Really courageous.....Aqiang, come over here.”

After hearing this that black handkerchief goon gave a quick glance to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng nodded. He was still very calm and was playing with the pistol that was still in his hand.

Aqiang moved a step towards the boss, at the same time that scarred face man took up a fruit knife kept on a table and suddenly stabbed it into Aqiang's chest neatly.

There was an expression of disbelief and shock on the face of Aqiang. Scarred face man covered his mouth and pierced that knife twice in his chest continuously. The blood gushed out from his chest and Aqiang quickly fell down on the floor.

“Good.”

The scarred face man dropped the blood covered fruit knife on the floor and took a napkin to wipe his hands. The boss then raised his head and looked at Ye Feng.

“Good job.”

Ye Feng nodded with a smile.

As far as the current action of the scarred face man was concerned, he was really very sharp. As a gangster boss, he knew that the prestige was the most important thing to maintain in front of his subordinates. And right now, under this situation where such a thing happened and it was clearly seen by Aqiang, so it had become very essential now to eliminate that potential informant, otherwise he would undoubtedly have spread the news about this incident outside.

For this scarred face man, apparently his life was more important than anything else and he also knew that the efficacy of that drug on his entire body was not a fake story. After he heard Ye Feng saying that he would be the boss of this gang, but from behind the scenes, it was already quite clear to him and he understood it all.

“Afterwards if there is something to dispatch, give the orders.”

Scarred face man said in a sinking voice.

“I know that you are not convinced, you can freely go to the hospital to get yourself checked.”

Ye Feng turned around and said with a smile: “Don’t blame me for not reminding you that because of the random drug treatment, there is a possibility that it may worsen your condition then even I cannot save you.”

“Elder brother Ye, rest assured.”

Scarred face man looked up and said: “You can call me Scarred face, I know you are not an ordinary person, just a moment ago that agility of yours, as well as

He tilted his head and looked down on the ground where that beautiful woman was lying with her bleeding chest.

People were usually most frightened of the unknown things.

Not only Ye Feng dodged the bullet but also killed that beautiful woman with a certain technique, leaving that scarred face man extremely scared! If Ye Feng wanted to kill him then he would be dead by now and his corpse would be lying on the floor just like the dead body of that beautiful woman.

“Are you a martial artist?”

The scarred face man asked in a somewhat hesitated manner.

“You shouldn’t ask, must not ask.”

Ye Feng snorted and said: “Well, I wouldn’t be too difficult on you, I am letting you do things that you have handled till now in your way and I really don’t care about other affairs. You are still the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang.”

“Yes.”

The scarred face man replied accordingly in a polite voice.

“As for the people standing outside, I will let you deal with them.”

Ye Feng kept the pistol in his pocket and advanced towards the door.

Just a moment ago the gesture of that black handkerchief goon had given an idea to Ye Feng that many people were standing outside the door and most of them had been attracted to the sound of the gunshot.

“You don’t worry.”

The scarred face man nodded many times then he opened his mouth and yelled towards the door outside: “I am telling you all to come inside, take hold of these two trivial dead bodies, drag them out of the room and deal with them!”

“Bang” rang a sound and the door from the outside was forcibly opened

and many people suddenly rushed in, those gold medallist goons also came in. At first they had devilish expressions on their faces, but in few seconds, their facial expressions changed, they were now standing stunned since the real situation in the room and their imagination both were polar opposite.

“What are you gawking at? Why haven’t you quickly dealt with these two traitors! This is my younger cousin and he is the one who saved my life just a moment ago. Later you see him, give him respect in the same way you give respect to me!”

The scarred face man gave a furious look to them while pointing his finger at Ye Feng to introduce, making those men stay silent.

“Then I will go first.”

Ye Feng didn’t want to complicate things here so he decided to leave first. He greeted that scarred face man and left the room immediately without consulting anyone. The group of people really thought that he was the younger cousin of their boss so they greeted Ye Feng while seeing him leaving the room in a respectful way.

The scarred face man wanted to personally see him off, but the situation was quite inappropriate, he needed to first get rid of these corpses and explain things to his men.

Chapter 023 - Brother Tie's Tragedy

Ye Feng walked out of the room, he took elevator and came down directly to the lobby, and meanwhile, he coincidentally saw many unexpected people.

Besides Tian Youliang and Brother Tie, whose nose was covered with a layer of gauze, there were several other people who were passing through the other side of the compartment, they were chatting and laughing among themselves, it seemed like they were in a very happy mood, full of life like they had accomplished something big.

Ye Feng planned not to move forward rather to stop and eavesdrop for a while.

“Relax! Since I have received the money, this matter will absolutely satisfy you.”

Brother Tie, wearing sunglasses, with his nose covered with a layer of gauze, said this with a cruel look on his face: “Just waiting for tomorrow morning, I will definitely make that guy cry and beg for mercy!”

Heavenly Serpent Gang's group leader 'Brother Tie' was quite illustrious in this area, it was not just because he used to fight fiercely and he was involved in bad things, but also because his younger sister was the mistress of the boss of the Heavenly serpent Gang and she also held a position of minor boss of the gang.

Obviously, Bother Tie was not a knuckle-head that he would like to become famous relying on a woman and that was the reason why he paid more attention to train his team including his henchman. When he came to know about Ye Feng and his strength then he tried to attract him to join his team, it was not at all strange, but unfortunately Ye Feng declined his offer without giving a second thought.

“If he was beaten up severely and got crippled, will there be any trouble?”

Tian Youliang was a young guy after all, so the matter which was being discussed right now had scared and somewhat startled him. It took only a trivial amount of tens of thousands for him to disable a high school student, now he would be on a wheelchair throughout his life, it was really very cruel!

“Hmphh! My Heavenly Serpent Gang has means to kill people, crippling someone is a trivial matter for us.”

Brother Tie coldly groaned, it was obvious that Heavenly Serpent Gang had a strong supporter supporting them from background, so there was no need to worry.

“This is natural, Ha ha.”

Seeing a discontented look on Brother Tie’s face, Tian Youliang’s father promptly gave an explanation to defend his son: “My son is somewhat surprised that Brother Tie has decided to assist us in this matter, please don’t mind him.”

“Hold on Dad, Brother Tie

Tian Youliang was originally in a drunken state, and at this time, he suddenly pointed his finger towards the two men and said: “Isn’t that Ye Feng?”

As expected, Ye Feng was standing there, behind those people, he was in a very calm and collected mood and slowly walked away from them as he already understood the intention of the other party and wasn’t in a mood to continue wasting his time here anymore.

Hearing him, Brother Tie turned back, he finally saw Ye Feng who had established a profound impression on his mind. This was the boy who smashed Brother Tie’s face with a brick last time and he also dared to decline his offer, certainly it seemed as if he didn’t care about the influence of Brother Tie and his gang, Heavenly Serpent Gang!

“You boy, you actually dare to look for your Brother Tie? But you are too late!”

Brother Tie laughed, he had already taken it for granted that Ye Feng came here because he had recognized Brother Tie, he couldn’t help but felt proud of himself and said: “Lots of opportunities come in the life of a human being, but only once, right now, even if you kneel down to beg me to accept you as my little brother, that will never happen!”

“Is it?”

Ye Feng smiled slightly while looking at other party.

“Ye Feng, do you know what place is this?”

Tian Youliang was very much drunk and said in a carefree manner, he was holding the wall to support himself and was also very much excited as he had already imagined how Brother Tie was going to beat the crap out of Ye Feng.

Even his father hadn't expected that he would see Ye Feng at this place, although it was actually a pleasant surprise for them. Obviously, now there was no need to wait till tomorrow morning, they could now take a hold of this Ye Feng and teach him a lesson.

“Begin! Make this boy understand the fate of those who dare to offend our Heavenly Serpent Gang.”

Brother Tie ordered, two gold medallist goons of Heavenly Serpent didn't waste any time and immediately rushed towards Ye Feng.

Ye Feng remained calm until these goons came in front of him, then in an instant, his hands moved – Bagua Boxing! His fists were quick as the lightning and left afterimages as they advanced towards those two goons and hit both of them, in just a couple of seconds, two sounds resounded one after another – Bang, Bang and both of the goons were blasted away by the two simultaneous punches, both of them instantaneously flew upside down and then crashed against the wall and fell miserably on the floor and started groaning pitifully.

This sound suddenly attracted the attention of everyone present around that place.

How couldn't the people in Tianhua casino possibly know that who was in charge around here? But today, they were seeing something unexpected, that in the headquarters of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, someone actually dared to oppose them and was hitting the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang one after another. This scene had greatly surprised the surrounding people and the expressions on their faces seemed as if they just saw an alien.

When they saw that just a casual flick of hand, used by a youth who seemed like a high-school student, was enough to send these two goons crashing against the wall, they were very shocked in their hearts. They thought that today, probably, this boy wouldn't be able to leave this place alive.

Brother Tie was stunned by seeing his two subordinates on the floor after being punched and what was shocking that everything happened in a flash, which completely startled him. He already knew that Ye Feng was capable of fighting back but he didn't know that he could fight at this level, keeping in mind that those two goons were considered the gold medallist goons of the Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Ye Feng drew out his fist and looked calmly at Brother Tie and said: "I advise you to get out of the way, do not get involved, otherwise you will be responsible for the consequences."

"Bullshit! Arrogant kid is threatening his dad!"

How could Brother Tie accept the threatening by a high school student, he waved his hand to give instruction to the dozens of members of the

Heavenly Serpent Gang to rush towards Ye Feng!

All the visitors surrounding the Tianhua Casino were ready to see a show on the spot, they were thinking that very soon, Ye Feng would be killed, exactly then, a voice burst out from behind Ye Feng: “I, your boss, order you to stop!”

Ye Feng turned his head and saw the scarred face man, there was an angry expression on his face!

The scarred face man had given the work to his men to deal with those two dead bodies, and after that, he had immediately run down quickly to catch up with Ye Feng and request him regarding his matter, but after seeing the current scene, how could he not be furious?

Brother Tie suddenly shouted out: “Brother, this boy doesn’t care about our Heavenly Serpent Gang, I was about to teach him.....”

“Hmph.”

Scarred face man coldly groaned and quickly interrupted Brother Tie’s words, he took a quick glance around that place and indifferently waved his hand: “Ye Feng is a distantly related younger cousin of mine, just a moment ago, he also saved my life, and you say that you want to teach him a lesson?”

All the people around that place gawked hearing this statement.

What?

This high school student was the distantly related younger cousin of the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, and on top of that, he even rescued his life? Lie! Must be some mistake right?

Tian Youliang felt lifeless all of a sudden. He couldn't accept that Ye Feng had a relationship with the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. No wonder Ye Feng dared to be impolite with the Heavenly Serpent Gang, certainly, he was actually the distant cousin of the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang! So the discussion they just had in the private room all went in vain? Now, not only they wouldn't think about teaching him a lesson, but they also invited a bad luck on themselves!

“Ah Tie, how long have you been working for me?”

Scarred face man asked this while looking at Brother Tie.

“Brother, three years.....”

Brother Tie didn't know why did the boss ask this question and what would happen to him now? Frightened, he looked at Ye Feng once then replied.

“In these three years, you gathered your younger sister and Aqiang in your team and then unexpectedly, you guys tried to collaborate and made a plot to murder me, if it weren't for Brother Ye then I would have lost my life few minutes ago and wouldn't be standing here in front of you!”

The scarred face man was saying all this in a very serious and ruthless

way, it seemed like this was the truth and had actually happened. On the other side, Ye Feng was very much impressed with his acting skills and truly admired him for his performance. This man was really a talented person, as expected of someone who was able to hold such a high position of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was absolutely beyond the capacity of a mediocre person.

This sentence gave a good enough explanation to everyone about the death of those two people, and meanwhile, he very conveniently also mentioned the importance of the existence of Ye Feng in his explanation, thus by this way, he killed two birds with one stone.

“Brother, how is this possible.....”

As soon as Brother Tie heard him, he went into shock.

It was over!

Tian Youliang and his father both looked at each other in dismay. They didn't expect how unexpectedly the things would develop like this. They actually encountered this kind of thing, wasn't this the so-called unexpected strike of big bad luck for them? Both of them then looked towards Brother Tie, such kind of thing happened all of a sudden, the most tragic one was this guy.....

The scarred face man waved his hand to give order to the surrounding men to capture these three people, and instantly, a group of people rushed towards them.

Chapter 024 - Let's Go To The School Together

Finally, Tian Youliang, his father and Brother Tie, all of these three were handed over to the men of Scarred face man to deal with. On the basis of the personality of the Scarred face man, it was quite obvious that those three wouldn't be killed, rather their skin would be peeled off in order to extremely torture them.

Those three men including Brother Tie were taken away by force, Ye Feng saw that but he simply didn't care at all, instead suddenly something hit his mind that he had probably no money left. So he looked at the Scarred face man and said "Oh by the way, is it fine to conveniently borrow some cash from you?"

This stunned the scarred face man for a moment. He thought that as per the skill of Ye Feng, how could he possibly not have money?

However pondering for a while, he then nodded and said: "Come with me."

Ye Feng looked at his back while thinking that he just asked for a convenient few thousands, then why did he need to go with the scarred face man? He then guessed that the Scarred face man might have something to talk about, so together with him, he left the hall leaving behind a pile of dumbfounded members of Heavenly Serpent Gang and other night visitors who were still whispering about the whole incident.

From all this, it had become clear to everyone that the group leader Brother Tie would be removed from his position, and the boy named Ye

Feng, whose appearance was still clear in the minds of many people present on the spot, was listed among one of the people one must never offend!

Ye Feng didn't expect that his actions would have so much impact on people.

A moment later, while following the scarred face man, Ye Feng came to a relatively secluded room which was a small warehouse.

The Heavenly Serpent Gang was ranked as one of the top three gangs of Yanjing city that had extraordinary natural wealth. This small warehouse was usually used during emergency situations, like when they were in need of cash for ransom to save a fellow gang member, it came in handy.

The scarred face man opened a complicated door lock and then took Ye Feng inside along with him. In the entire small warehouse, there were ten wall cabinets embedded inside the wall, it could be figured out just by seeing that this place was newly constructed in Tianhua Casino.

Without any hesitation, the scarred face man arrived in front of a fixed safe cabinet and inputted his fingerprints, passwords and so on and finally opened it. What appeared before Ye Feng was a cabinet full of cash, a glowing red piece, he could roughly calculate just by one look that this was probably one million worth of cash!

“Brother Ye, is this enough?”

He asked this as he knew that the cash one million was way too much for Ye Feng to carry off and felt that the same would be going on in the mind of Ye Feng as well.

“That’s enough.”

Ye Feng remained very calm and casually took two packs then put twenty thousand cash on his body, this was more than enough. At present, there was no such thing as the storage ring or storage place on him, so it was really inconvenient for him to carry too much cash.

The scarred face man was observing him continuously, seeing Ye Feng’s reaction to this situation, he secretly nodded, as he once again affirmed that Ye Feng was really not an ordinary person, since he saw such a big amount of cash but still didn’t bat an eye.

He still kept on observing Ye Feng’s expression. Finally, he gathered all his guts, clenched his teeth and said: “If Brother Ye wants more money, I don’t have any objection, so long as you accept my one condition.”

“What condition?”

Ye Feng asked indifferently. He had already guessed that there was something going on in the mind of the other party. The scarred face man was the boss of such an influential gang and it was not possible for a big gangster like him to obey Ye Feng easily, no matter how much he feared the death.

“Teach me martial arts!”

The scarred face man said firmly with an apparent fiery look in his eyes.

The statement took Ye Feng by surprise, to teach him martial arts?

After slight hesitation, Ye Feng did not answer him instead asked something from him: “What do you know about martial arts?”

Actually, he just wanted to clarify about the situation and status of martial arts here on the earth.

Unfortunately, the scarred face man did not know much about it, but he still said: “Not much, but this scar on my face was inflicted by a knife wielding martial artist.....”

While the scarred face man was telling him about this scar incident, his eyes were exhibiting a look of envy. It was obvious that he yearned for martial arts.

.....

An hour later, Ye Feng left the Tianhua Casino along with twenty thousand cash.

From what that scarred face man said, it was quite clear that he did not know much about martial arts, but after hearing about the incident in detail, Ye Feng got a rough idea about that knife wielding martial artist,

about how fast and strong his attacks would have been when he attacked the scarred face man.

That knife wielding martial artist must have possessed approximately ten years of cultivation, from the explanation of that incident that Ye Feng heard from the scarred face man, his knife skill seemed quit exquisite, and his agility-class technique must have been at first-class level!

At that time, if there had not been a little brother to protect the Scarred face man by blocking the knife of that martial artist, then that knife would have killed him definitely. During evening time, when that martial artist was passing by, he heard them making too much noise and found it annoying, which resulted into the death of a dozen in just an interval of few seconds, he started killing people with his double edged knife without giving a second thought.

After that incident, when several people were chopped down by a knife, the scar of the knife gave him a nickname of “Scarred face man” and it became very popular. Now, no one remembered what he was really called previously.

“If I met that knife wielding martial artist, we would be far from rivals! Besides, that was ten years ago if he is still alive then he had the cultivation of almost twenty years, in that case, he is probably on a completely different level when it comes to strength.”

Ye Feng was now secretly very alert as he finally knew that in this world as well, there was the existence of several expert martial artists.

After listening to the scarred face man, Ye Feng fuzzily said that as long as he would obey him properly, he would teach him martial arts, making him happy. So, after ten years, he finally had this kind of opportunity!

Just before leaving, Ye Feng made a request to prepare three million by tomorrow morning, and also to collect certain traditional Chinese herbal medicines in next half a month of time. He was preparing all these things to attend the trade fair in Langfang.

Seeing that the scarred face man promised him to fulfil both the requests, Ye Feng left a phone number and left.

.....

He finally returned to his villa in the “Qingfeng Park” and took rest for the rest of the night until the dawn. After a peaceful sleep, he resumed his energy to the most flourishing condition.

When the sun came out, he stretched himself to get out of the bed, opened the door to go to the school.

“Ye Feng, be a bit faster or else you will be late for the school.”

He just came out of his villa and heard a very pleasant, clear and crisp voice, wasn't it Su Menghan's voice?

“Even if I am late, that's none of your business.”

Ye Feng said in a very rude manner, he raised his head to look and noticed Su Menghan's figure, bathing under the sun, she appeared exceptionally beautiful and attractive, while her beautiful sweet smile surprised him for a moment.

A white flower on the collar of her small shirt with natural folds brought out her attractive S-shaped figure. An under knee-length white skirt, a pair of white legs were elegantly close to each other, making her seem slim and graceful.

Under the sun, her delicate oval face was suffused with a smile, she was really extremely happy seeing Ye Feng.

“Come on, let's go to the school together.”

Su Menghan saw him standing and gawking, she stretched her hands and waved twice in front of him to bring him back to his senses. In his heart, he somewhat chuckled: It seemed like this girl's charm was really very big.

“Why do you want to go together?”

Ye Feng regained his calm and did not know what she was scheming so he asked this with a light hmph.

“My dad doesn't let anyone to come pick me up, so I have to go with you.”

Su Menghan said in a somewhat grieving manner: “I have been waiting

for half an hour at your door.”

She thought that Ye Feng finally promised to take her to Langfang so this was the time to develop and maintain a good relationship with him, or else he might go back from his words. Just because of this, she was deliberately waiting for him in front of Ye Feng’s villa so that they could go to the school together.

“I do not know what you’re exactly thinking, well, let’s go.”

Ye Feng shook his head then walked towards the entrance of Qingfeng Park.

“Wait for me, ah, why are you going so fast?”

Su Menghan was trying to match up her speed with him, her pure and beautiful figure seemed very charming and lively. When they passed through the entrance, the young security guard was unable to take his eyes off her, her beautiful figure almost made him to drool all over himself.

They had just left the Qingfeng Park and saw that four strong-looking men were waiting at the side. There was the mark of white snake on their sleeves which clearly indicated that they were the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Ye Feng saw them but didn’t stop rather kept on moving.

“Oh, run!”

Su Menghan figured out that they were not good people, suddenly she panicked and pulled taut Ye Feng's arm to escape. She thought that Ye Feng had annoyed them several times, and now, these four men came here to teach him a lesson, just by their looks, it was clear that they looked very serious. If she didn't quickly escape with Ye Feng then this would really be a dead end for them!

“Why do you panic?”

Certainly it was not possible for a young girl like Su Menghan to pull him and run, but when Ye Feng saw her so genuinely worried for him, it touched his heart. He then said to calm her down: “Relax, they're not looking for trouble.”

Although he said so, but how could Su Menghan possibly believe him so easily?

The way Ye Feng provoked them many times, according to the style of an organized gangster group, it was already a strange matter for them to still leave him alive! Moreover, so early in the morning, four goons were waiting outside, what could possibly be their goal besides looking for trouble?

Suddenly, Su Menghan became extremely nervous in her heart, as she noticed that Ye Feng was not at all in a mood to escape with her, so she finally hid behind him.

Chapter 025 - Goes To Langfang

“Brother Ye, your cards.”

Those four men came in front of Ye Feng and handed over two bank cards to him.

Ye Feng took the card. He was quite aware that one of the cards had two million cash and the other card had three million which he had asked from the Scarred face man to arrange by morning. He had the plan to give this bank card of three million to Ou B.

For the Scarred face man arranging three million cash was not a big deal, although the Heavenly Servant Gang didn't use to keep huge amount of liquid cash. Still arranging three million was not a big problem for him.

This could also be considered as his sincerity towards Ye Feng.

Could it be possible to subdue the Scarred face man this quickly and take hold of the Heavenly Serpent Gang behind the scenes? Ye Feng sighed at his good luck. If the Scarred face man didn't have such sort of past, he hadn't known the techniques and moves of martial arts and there wouldn't have been the feeling of deep fear in his heart from the martial artists, and a simple threat by Ye Feng couldn't have been successful alone to force him to act obediently.

If the target of Ye Feng would have been to capture the other two big

gangs, then this action wouldn't be so smooth.

After handing over those two bank cards to Ye Feng, those four men bowed respectfully then they turned back and left.

The actions of those four men stunned Su Menghan, who was still hiding behind Ye Feng.

What was with this situation? Was not Heavenly Serpent Gang supposed to be a very flamboyant and fearful gang, then why were they being so respectful to a high school student? She couldn't help but recalled that how her father Su Xinchang tried to keep her close to Ye Feng by all possible means, could it be that the background of Ye Feng was unexpectedly formidable, so not even the Heavenly Serpent Gang could dare provoke him?

Moreover "Brother Ye" this name had Ye Feng also became one of the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang?

"Come on."

Ye Feng put away the bank cards and said in a light tone which interrupted the thoughts of Su Menghan.

All the way, she obediently did not say a word, she just had a guess about the status of Ye Feng, but she did not dare to ask from him.

Since she did not speak a single word all the way, this silence made Ye Feng quite happy. After the two walked twenty minutes to reach the

Yanshan High School, then suddenly, they became the centre of attraction among the people present in the surroundings.

Did Ye Feng and that Xiaohua, Su Menghan, walk all the way to school together? (Xiaohua – means school beauty)

There was no mistake!

They walked side by side all the way to the classroom, Ye Feng as if heard the sounds of many hearts shattering, including his best friend Ou B as well.

Barely they sat on their seats and Ou B pulled himself together, he was filled with righteous indignation and said: “Small bee, you too didn’t do justice, you actually took hold of the prettiest girl of our school so silently? Sure enough you have the advantage of being close to her, but first month

“Do not make guesses so randomly.”

Ye Feng took the bank card out, he put aside the former discussion and said: “Take it back to your father, I don’t like to owe others. This card has three million cash, the password is written on the back of the card.”

“What, what?”

Ou B subconsciously took the bank card, his mind was still in a stunned state.

Just a moment ago he was in a very bad mood. To express his anger, he had come to Ye Feng and Su Menghan's seat, but now suddenly, he had been stunned by Ye Feng's words.

Three million?

Just over a night's time had passed and he earned three million?

Ou B's first reaction was.... this guy was lying! But to think carefully did he really need to lie at the first place? How much money this card had, it could be figured out the moment it would be used in the ATM, then for how long he could conceal this fact?

"Small bee, you are kidding right? We don't want you to pay back the money....."

A look of surprise was there on Ou B's face.

"Well, your father has given me a very clear idea in my mind, so I feel relieved."

YE Feng smiled while patting on his shoulder.

Ou B accepted the bank card although he was not fully convinced by his statement. He was being sceptical, but Ou B suddenly tapped his head and said: "Yes, this is an invitation to the trade fair."

Until this time, Ou B realized that Ye Feng had completely changed and he had a feeling that it might be because of his grandfather?

Ye Feng thought that he should open up a precious invitation letter now, so he kept it in his pocket.

He took a look at the invitation letter, it was an envelope with a red title page, in the title page it was printed 'soaring dragon', there was nothing strange about it when he looked at it for the first time, but in no time he felt the seal position of the envelope, actually there was a faint strange power flowing around it!

"Thank you."

He quietly kept aside the invitation letter, but an idea was unceasingly floating around in his heart.

This so-called antique trade fair was not a simple thing to talk about! At the seal of the invitation letter there was a strange energy flowing which was totally similar to the internal energy of that oval faced young girl. Until now Ye Feng had no idea what this energy was called but now he had a little idea that this energy was definitely related to this world of martial arts. (Ye Feng's internal energy is called zhenqi and its stronger than the internal energy of this world's martial artists)

"Little Ou, does your father hold more invitations?"

Ye Feng asked.

“Just one, why?”

Ou B replied with a strange look on his face.

“Nothing, just asking.”

Ye Feng was perfunctory, he was thinking very fast about this invitation case. There was no doubt this invitation was really very precious, Ou A could go that far to get one obviously for the sake of that half spirit stone.

It seemed like there was a possibility that the organizer and all the participants of the trade fair might be from the world of Chinese martial arts!

Could he also bump into that oval faced young girl?

Some interesting thoughts were going on in Ye Feng’s mind regarding the antique trade fare. Fortunately, after two weeks, he was able to achieve the cultivation worth of one year and five months, and now he could use the technique called “camouflage”, then he would be able to change his appearance for a certain amount of time, even changing the height and build was possible.

“In this world, people should not be aware of immortal techniques. But just in case, in order to provide against contingencies, bringing a mask is better.”

Ye Feng made the decision.

He looked around and noticed that Tian Youliang didn't come to the school today. When he inquired about it, he found out that last night, Tian Youliang requested for his transfer from the school, since he no longer dared to continue studying in Yanshan high School.

.....

Half a month passed in a flash.

Now in the month of April, in Langfang, it was raining lightly. From now on, there were two months left for the college entrance exam.

“.....I'll be careful Uncle Ou, you rest assured.”

Ye Feng hung up the phone, he took Su Menghan out of the Langfang Railway Station along with him. At noon, the sky was a bit gloomy, Ye Feng felt the fine drizzle, he was in a slightly bored mood.

While Su Menghan on the contrary was in an extremely good mood, she was being very cheerful all the way because now she could visit her grandmother, which was the main reason behind her heartfelt excitement.

For Ye Feng coming to Langfang was to attend the Trade fair, moreover one of the more reasons was to bump into some good stuff. But the most important reason was to scout the level of martial arts on the Earth.

But for Su Menghan, her goal behind coming to Langfang was to visit her grandmother, whom she hadn't met for almost ten years, naturally her mood would be good.

"To visit a family member, and on top of that, your father is not accompanying you, this is actually a very responsible behaviour."

Ye Feng smiled and said this in a sarcastic tone.

"He has to deal with Xie clan, he would never dare to come."

Su Menghan lightly snorted, she didn't speak anything rather she turned and asked: "Your mock test, how was it?"

Before coming here to Langfang, their school had arranged two mock tests. Su Menghan was not at all worried since her score used to come as one of the best scores in the school. As for Ye Feng, he was one of the lowest scorers in the class.

The talk about the examination brought a smile on Ye Feng's face, some time ago, he had been very busy refining the compounded drug, he was preparing his own drug to sell in the trade fair, so how could he possibly get time to study for the mock tests?

Undoubtedly, his exam results were very bad, even worse than before..... But Ye Feng didn't need to worry about it since as per his present memory, even if he started studying one week before the college entrance examination, he could still do fairly well for entering the Yanjing University. (As instructed by Ye Feng's grandfather)

“Wellgood I guess, anyways now you can go your way, I can go mine, let's not interfere in each other's affairs.”

Ye Feng said fuzzily then he turned around to walk away.

“Hey you wait!”

Su Menghan saw him going away and hurriedly stopped him. She didn't know what made him come to Langfang, she had a rough guess that he might have come here with her just to accompany her, but now it seemed that it wasn't the case?

But if Ye Feng left her here alone, this place was completely new to her, what would she do in case she got into trouble?

Chapter 026 - Moron Cousin

Ye Feng stopped from moving ahead since he was called out by Su Menghan. He turned his head and asked: “What happened?”

Su Menghan took out her phone, there was her grandmother’s address recorded in it, she read it and with a little embarrassment she said: “You accompany me.”

“You are such a big girl and still want people to accompany you?”

Ye Feng frowned, obviously he was not happy.

“You..... I, I don’t have money.....”

She was holding her white skirt and pinching it with her hands while looking at Ye Feng coyly. Actually her father, Su Xinchang, had controlled her pocket money very strictly, it was not his idea though rather he was forced by that Xie clan’s woman to do so.

“.....”

Ye Feng was somewhat speechless. He looked at the time, it was exactly 12 P.M. in the noon. The antique trade fair was about to start at 6 P.M., so he had no reason to worry about it.

“Let’s go then.”

Without wasting any time he stopped a taxi and along with her he moved toward the address of her grandmother.

Out of Langfang city, towards eastern side, few villages and small towns were located. Su Menghan's grandmother's house was in the same direction and luckily the antique trade fair was also located in the same direction. So Ye Feng was at ease as he didn't need to worry about not having enough time to reach the fair on time.

All the way, Su Menghan was somewhat emotionally disturbed. It was because of two reasons. Firstly, she was going to meet her grandmother after a decade and secondly because she was going to see her with a guy.

Half a month ago, she and Ye Feng were merely unfamiliar neighbours. But now he was actually accompanying her to her maternal home together. He was really a very violent guy and Su Menghan had already seen his brutal self. In case his beastly self showed up then she definitely wouldn't be able to resist him.

Certainly after getting along with him in last half a month time, Su Menghan finally decided to believe in Ye Feng. The most important point was all the time, Ye Feng never showed any interest in her appearance and he usually looked quite cold and indifferent towards her.

Perhaps in Ye Feng's eyes, she was unimportant.

Su Menghan thought that a woman's intuition was generally accurate, from Ye Feng's consistent attitude, she could now feel that the other party was not acting hard to avoid her rather he really was not paying

attention to her.

This made her to show a trace of frustration, didn't she even had a little charm to attract him?

After covering three or four kilometres of distance, the taxi stopped in front of a residential area. Ye Feng paid the fare and instructed Su Menghan to get out of the car. They took a broad view of the whole area to look at a peaceful auspicious scene, the buildings stood in great numbers, the alleys were interlocked, it could be seen clearly that the cars were parked everywhere, obviously this economic development was quite good.

They asked the taxi driver to ascertain the concrete address direction. After that they walked toward the destination.

“Ye Feng, I am a bit nervous

Su Menghan said this while grabbing the lower part of her clothes. She was really quite disturbed.

“Why are you nervous, although you have not seen her for so long, but still, she is your relative then what are you afraid of?”

Ye Feng shook his head, he couldn't help but thought about his own life. Whether he was in the World of the Immortals or he came to the Earth after his rebirth, he did not have any family member at both the places.

In the World of the Immortals, he had only one master and here on the Earth as well, he had only one relative, his mysterious grandfather.

How did it feel to have a complete family?

He didn't know, because he never had one.

Following the house number plate, they quickly arrived at the outside of a courtyard in a building. They stood at the entrance. Su Menghan had a very anxious and fearful look on her face. Ye Feng stepped forward to press the doorbell.

“Who is it?”

An impatient, middle-aged woman's voice came out, “Come inside.”

Middle aged woman's voice?

Ye Feng quickly guessed that it was Su Menghan's Aunt. Su Menghan's grandfather had already died, he had total four children, the youngest one was her mother and the rest three were her uncles.

He had heard that her grandmother was living with her uncle.

Soon the door opened and the person who appeared in front of the two was a somewhat fat middle-aged woman. She looked at them very strangely: “Kids, are you looking for someone? Dai Gen is not home.”

Seeing Su Menghan that middle-aged woman was somewhat in amazement. But then she hid the envy and contempt in her eyes. It was quite obvious that Su Menghan's beauty and charm made her own Aunt jealous of her. It was really quite easy for women to get jealous.

"II am Su Menghan."

Su Menghan was little hesitant to ask: "May I ask you something, aren't you my Aunt?"

"Su Menghan?"

The middle-aged woman repeated the name, she then reacted and with a puzzled look on her face and asked: "Are you Su Menghan?"

Su Menghan nodded again and again out of the fear that the opposite party didn't recognize her.

The middle-aged woman said in a thick voice: "After so many years, what brought you here?"

"I..... I have actually come to see my grandmother, and....."

While she was saying this she got interrupted by her Aunt.

"The old woman got sick and died a few years ago."

The Middle-aged woman looked very indifferent as if she was talking about the death of a stranger. Suddenly she remembered something, in a somewhat vigilant way, she looked at Ye Feng and Su Menghan: “If you have nothing else to do, then leave.”

She was very vigilant, it was not without a reason.

The people of this area did not know anything about how Su Xinchang’s business was flourishing bigger and bigger day by day because he used to be a poor guy when he lived around here. Su Menghan’s mother leaving everything behind followed him and finally ended up dying in a car accident, and the people of this area didn’t know what happened after that.

Who would know that Su Xinchang had remarried a person of Yanjing city’s Xie clan, unexpectedly he got not only power and position but also fortune as well. Until now, Su Sheng group had successfully hit the market with a sale price of one billion!

Here, people used to think that Su Menghan must be having a hard time after losing her mother for the past few years. Now she suddenly came back, then she would certainly want to borrow money.

“Hello, how can this.....”

Seeing the other party was about to close the door on their face, Su Menghan became very anxious, she never thought that her Aunt actually would not welcome her.

“Just leave, we can’t help you.”

The middle-aged woman finally looked at them once again, that look in her eyes was very strange, but she shook her head to close the door. But suddenly at the same time, she looked at a face which was not far from the alley.

“Help, mummy, save me

It sounded like a very distressed voice, passing from far to near.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan together turned back and suddenly saw a young person wearing short sleeved clothes. He appeared to be in a very difficult situation. He was running while limping, and behind him, three men, who obviously looked from the crime world, were chasing him.

“Not paying back our money and on top of that running away from us, it’s completely useless, pay back the money.”

One of the ferocious men said, his eyes appeared very ruthless, he moved forward to catch him then kicked him very hard, the short-sleeved young person got kicked and fell on the ground. Another man took a brick and hit on the skull of that youth.

“Dai Gen, do not hit him, do not hit him.....”

Middle-aged woman suddenly got panicked, her hands and feet were shaking, she, without paying attention to Ye Feng and Su Menghan, went out of the house. She was crying while running towards him: “Dai

Gen, didn't I tell you to not gamble, but you never listen to me..."

"Not only gamble, he also takes drugs."

A black jacket man rolled up his sleeves while looking at the middle-aged woman who was running over to him, then said: "Are you his mother? This boy owes us 300,000 so hurry up and pay back our money, otherwise just wait to collect his dead body."

"300,000?"

Middle-aged woman suddenly went into shock, from where would she manage to arrange such a huge amount of money now?

"Ye Feng"

Su Menghan pulled at the back of the sleeves of Ye Feng, wearing a look of pleading on her face, she wanted to help that youth.

"Other party is not willing to recognize you, still you ask me to help her?"

Ye Feng found this very funny: "This cousin of yours not only gambles but he also takes drugs. I am not so dumb as to offend the local mafia just to help such a moron like him."

Chapter 027 - Trying To Stop Injustice

Ye Feng raised his head to look at the front where those three gang members were beating the short sleeved youth badly, it really seemed like he was about to die, his fresh blood was spattered everywhere.

How could Su Menghan have ever seen such a miserable scene, she kept on pulling Ye Feng's cuffs again and again and begged him for help.

“Stop it.”

Ye Feng failed to ignore her continuous begging, finally he reluctantly shook his head and quickly walked forward and in an instant he blocked the hand of one of the men, who was holding a brick to hit that youth.

“Boy, who are you?”

One of the men looked at Ye Feng with a quite brutal facial expression and said: “Mind your own business!”

“Trying to stop injustice, that's all.”

Ye Feng replied to him in a very soft tone, in this situation he knew already that he shouldn't give any chance to the other party and it was quite obvious that the opposite party was not willing to give up. Just in order to get their money back, they were terribly beating that youth to death which was quite weird behaviour for Ye Feng. He didn't understand this type of attitude at all.

To her surprise, seeing Ye Feng unexpectedly came out to help her son gave her a powerful shock. Normally in this kind of situation if it were some other person then he might have run away very far from this fight. Who would dare come to help some stranger?

In an instant, Ye Feng came into action.

He turned away and very conveniently took the advantage of this opportunity. He started condensing Zhenqi into his fist and in a matter of seconds and punched one of the men with a “Bang”. Since everything happened so fast that the man didn’t get enough time to react to his punch, and all of a sudden, his whole body flew and bumped against the wall. He was very badly beaten up by his punch.

While on the other hand, seeing the solid attack of Ye Feng, the other two men barely tried to respond to his shot and got away from him but Ye Feng couldn’t be underestimated. He was way faster than those two, instantly he fired two punches back to back towards them!

These two punches couldn’t be underestimated at all!

Once again the simple two fists of Ye Feng sent those two adult men flying several meters away. Both of them crashed on the ground and the impact caused the dust to fly upwards. After that a series of pitiful scream spread out in that area. In addition to those three men, Su Menghan’s moron and useless cousin was also there accompanying them in this screaming, he was also yelling due to severe pain.

“Well, quickly take him to the hospital.”

Ye Feng shifted his vision toward the ground to look at Su Menghan's moron cousin. He was lying down on the ground screaming badly due to intense pain. Ye Feng then said to the Aunt while looking at her: "By the way, there is no need to thank me, just say 'thanks' to her."

Hearing this, she immediately ran toward Su Menghan with a smile on her face.

It was needless to say that how much happy Su Menghan was, it could be noticed easily. Her smile could be compared with a blooming flower at that time. She was thinking that Ye Feng was really very ferocious back then. How easily he dealt with these three gang men. Being together with him was surely not a bad idea.

But who would have thought that Su Menghan's Aunt was actually not at all grateful for the kindness shown to her, instead she started scolding her in a loud tone: "Thanks? Do you even know that you have brought a big trouble for us? These men were the member of Heavenly Serpent Gang and you don't know how powerful they are..... Dai Gen, hurry up let's go to the hospital, they hit you really hard with something and here we are doing something very irrelevant....."

While she was scolding her, she took her cell phone out simultaneously and started making a call.

Both Ye Feng and Su Menghan were completely speechless listening to her words, they never thought that an unexpected kind help could also be blamed like this. However, the Heavenly Serpent Gang? Who would have thought that the existence and influence of the Heavenly Serpent Gang

could be in this place as well? It appeared that the power and sphere of influence of this gang was way larger than what Ye Feng had imagined.

Since this matter was about the Heavenly Serpent Gang, so Ye Feng didn't need to be afraid of anything.

“Boy ...you dare to hit the people of Heavenly Serpent Gangkeke. You are a dead man, keke”

A man from that gang, who was lying down on the ground, said this to Ye Feng and then he pulled out his cell phone and started calling for help.

Too lazy to care for what he said, Ye Feng took out his cell phone and called directly the scarred face man: “Scar, the people of your gang are also there in Langfang city?”

The phone call from Ye Feng obviously startled him a bit, he originally did not know what to do in this situation, but then he immediately recollected his composure and replied: “Brother Ye, did you bump into them? Yes, our people also work there, but not many.....”

While speaking about this place, he suddenly started hesitating, he was confused whether he should say it or not.

“Go on.”

Ye Feng gave him the hint to continue.

“Yes, actually they are there to test new drugs and they are just trying to create a new way to earn extra and convenient money.”

The scarred face man thought that there was something that was not right to tell him, but still he replied.

“New drugs?”

Ye Feng frowned hearing his words : “I will talk about this matter when I come back, for now, just withdraw your people from here at once, and one more thing, from tomorrow, Heavenly Serpent Gang is prohibited to do any type of drugs business anywhere in future.”

“What? This.....”

His statement apparently startled the scarred face man.

Not to do the drugs business in future, this order of Ye Feng would certainly cause a great loss to the gang. The source of income of entire gang would reduce by half because of this!

The most important point was, now, the supplier of new drugs was not affable! Suddenly stopping the purchasing merchandise, it would be troublesome if the opposite party began to investigate into this matter. Even if Ye Feng was a martial artist, he might not be able to handle the opposite party.....

“It’s settled then, and if I later find out that you are still continuing this business, then you better be prepared for the consequences.”

Ye Feng did not say much, just warned him then hung up the phone.

Su Menghan listened to everything and was secretly scared. She was thinking that in the end what was the identity of Ye Feng, making a phone call to stop Heavenly Serpent Gang from doing the drugs business? Even if he were the boss of this gang, still it should be impossible for him to achieve such a thing! After all, the interest of the whole pack was not the matter that a single person could decide by himself.

But listening to the tone of Ye Feng, the way he said it, there was a huge confidence visible in his appearance.....

Anyway, Ye Feng’s impression in the eyes of Su Menghan changed a bit. Now, she was seeing him in a new light. As the danger of taking drugs was well-known, and here, Ye Feng was just trying to ban Heavenly Serpent Gang from doing the drugs business, the idea was very good, of course, the goal could not be reached, she was still quite skeptical about it.

“Well, you heard it too.”

Ye Feng glanced at her: “Listen closely, if you dare to spread the word about my relationship with Heavenly Serpent Gang then....”

As soon as she heard him saying this, she immediately stared at him to

shut his mouth. Inside her heart lots of things were going on which were making her very restless and uncomfortable as she didn't know at all about the relationship between Ye Feng and Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“You haven't gone yet? Just go, don't hurt us.”

Su Menghan's Aunt said this and rushed toward her son while waving her hands. She then started trying to lift her son up. That short sleeved youth was already in a very miserable condition. He was limping and was also unconscious.

“Let's go.”

Ye Feng pulled Su Menghan to go since they were not welcomed by the other party, so there was no need for them to stay anymore.

“But

Su Menghan was little hesitant, she poured her gaze upon her unconscious cousin and seemed worried about him.

At this moment, suddenly the sound of a motorcycle resounded from far and gradually came closer second by second, and simultaneously, a rough male voice transmitted: “What happened here? How is Dai Gen?”

Su Menghan's Aunt who was standing at the doorway while supporting her son, Dai Gen, immediately turned around, looked at him then started complaining with tears in her eyes: “He has been hit terribly, hurry up, take him to the hospital or else, or else.....”

“How did it happen? He was hit by whom?”

The motorcycle then turned around, the man riding the bike was a forty year old man. He gave a quick glance around the area and was a bit startled seeing the situation. He then said: “We don’t have money for the hospital. I just took a loan to purchase the vehicle....”

Then the motorcycle stopped at the door and that man, without paying any attention to Su Menghan and Ye Feng, took out his phone to make a phone call. He just took loan for his son to buy a car, his son was about to get married and he didn’t have cash left on him.

Of course, that man also had two brothers.

“Brother, what, the money which was there to be used for the house renovation ran out? Well, well....”

“Brother, what, you recently picked up a project and your entire money was used up in that?”

Soon, that man put down the phone, he seemed dejected and did not expect that in such a critical moment, even his own blood related brothers would turn out to be so unreliable. This was really the world’s most frustrating situation for him.

“No matter what we will take him to the hospital first, we will deal with this money issue later when the time comes.”

The man finally made his decision and started preparing to start his motorcycle so that they could rush to the hospital to admit their son, Dai Gen.

“Ye Feng

Su Menghan looked at her side and pulled on the sleeves of Ye Feng. She looked at him and appeared very pitiful, her current appearance could compel even a heartless person to take pity on her.

“

Ye Feng knew that she was thinking about the 200,000 he had.

Chapter 028 - Listen To My Woman

Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan's sweet and charming face, he shook his head and said in a soft tone: "The world is a dangerous place, honest and kind hearted girl like you are normally rarely seen. Since you want to help them, I will give you a chance."

After saying this he took out that bank card of two hundred thousand from his pocket.

"Here, I am handing over this card to you, now its completely your decision as how to use this card, but you need to think clearly since you already know the result very well. Anyway, I'm going to do my own thing, have to do a phone call."

Finally Ye Feng made his decisions, first was let Su Menghan do whatever she wanted as she was a very kindhearted girl. And the second was to charge ransom from Heavenly Serpent Gang for their crime, their sin. That short-sleeved youth, Dai Gen was victimized by drugs and for this, Heavenly Serpent Gang was partly responsible, so this matter couldn't be ignored, somehow Ye Feng was feeling a bit sorry about this.

When she saw Ye Feng so solemnly explaining things to her, she took the card and nodded once.

Ye Feng felt a little funny inside while looking at her, actually in his heart he was looking forward to see what this girl was going to do now. After all, she had experienced cruel things in her life, he was thinking that was this girl really so simple and pure?

The motorcycle man and that middle-aged woman still didn't pay any attention to Ye Feng and Su Menghan again this time, they were busy supporting their son, Dai Gen, they were trying to board him on the motorcycle, but Dai Gen was in an unconscious state so it wasn't easy to do so.

Just then, two vans came whistling from the alley raising a cloud of dust everywhere, all of a sudden the way was blocked by them. One after the other, several sturdy men got down from the car, holding cigarettes in their mouths, bare chested, wearing a garment with a low neckline, two of them were still had their sunglasses on, just by giving a glance at them, one could say that they belonged to the criminal community in the society.

“Who dare to annoy Heavenly Serpent Gang, do you want to die?”

Headed by a muscular man in dark sunglasses, he spat out the cigarette and looked at the crowd standing in front of him very fiercely, as if he was trying to guess the person who hit their men.

Seeing these dangerous looking people, the parents of Dai Gen were immediately panicked, they stared at each other for a quick glance and then they suddenly pointed towards Ye Feng: “He is the one who is involved in this, how can we ordinary people dare to provoke you brothers?”

The dark sunglasses man suddenly turned his vision towards Ye Feng and when he saw at his side where the pretty attractive Su Menghan was standing, he remained surprised for a bit, he never thought that such a

beautiful lovely young girl could be seen at this kind of place.

Once someone provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, they would certainly have to pay the price.

The dark sunglasses man gave signal to his men by waving his hand, and in an instant, his ten or so people rushed towards Su Menghan and Ye Feng and surrounded them by forming a circle around them. Their frightening appearance terrified the parents of Dai Gen and they immediately moved towards one side.

That middle-aged man heaved a sigh of relief when he noticed that those gang members had completely ignored them, he then whispered: “Who are they, the young boy and girl?”

“It’s Su Menghan, your niece. Heavenly Serpent gang has come back to hit them, lets not get involved in this for our good, Dai Gen is already in such a miserable condition

The middle-aged woman said this with tears in her eyes, she cried since she was afraid that he would go back there to help them.

That man was a little surprised hearing about this, Su Menghan? How did she come back today..... His eyes were at Ye Feng and Su Menghan who were surrounded by a large group of gang members at that time. Although it was difficult for him to endure this but then he thought about their own situation clearly and shook his head to let it go.

No way, he couldn’t help those two who were standing against the

Heavenly Serpent Gang, besides in this current situation when he was surely going to get burdened under huge medical expenses. His son was badly injured, one of his legs was broken, on top of that, he was an addict, in addition to this, perhaps he had other injuries and concussion as well.

Su Menghan was extremely nervous. She grabbed the arms of Ye Feng very tightly and hid behind him. This time there were total eleven men in the opposite party. Besides, something was going on in her mind that why was Ye Feng not revealing his identity to them, they might have stopped all this chaos once it was told properly.....

As everyone knew that Ye Feng was simply not a bit worried about anything, for him, they were just trivial ten or so men, although he would need to use his hands and feet to deal with them, but for him, by no means it was a difficult problem.

Just when Ye Feng was prepared to begin, suddenly, the cellphone of the leader of this group rang up. He then waved to his men, letting them to go on first, while he stayed behind to answer the phone call.

“Hello boss, what..... Go back? Don’t do it?”

The dark sunglasses man was in shock: “Oh, yes I got it, but there is a boy who has stirred up trouble, first let me deal with him..... what?”

He looked up and saw Ye Feng who was at that time playing with two of his men, he hit both of them, both of them flew and crashed on the ground. Also he noticed that there was an old ancient ring on his finger of the right hand.

“Yes, yes, it’s him together with a young beautiful girl..... Well, ok got it boss!”

After that call, he understood very well that the situation was quite critical, so very quickly, he hung up the call then moved few steps forward and roared: “It’s my order! Everyone stop right-away!”

But he was a bit late.

He saw Ye Feng had embraced Su Menghan’s soft and slender waist in order to protect her. Besides, his several men had already been wiped out by him, they all were lying on the ground yelling in pain. It seemed like Ye Feng had very badly smashed them.

While the remaining five men were still gathered around those two vigilantly, actually they didn’t dare to go forward and fight with him.

That sunglasses man once again shouted very loudly, since he was uncertain about the whole situation, what happened, we mustn’t fight with him? Although this boy is very ferocious and powerful, but they still had to let him go.....

“Sorry, Brother Ye, it’s out fault.”

The man in dark sunglasses ran several steps towards Ye Feng, and with a slight smile, he scratched his head in a somewhat embarrassed manner.

“Anyway.”

Ye Feng had already guessed that just now, the scarred face man had called the sunglasses man, he waved his hand to him and said: “Just find a person to drive me to a place, the rest of you just stay here and listen to my woman, just do what she wants you to do, and you know why right?”

Su Menghan was still in the embrace of Ye Feng, after listening his words, her face instantly turned red.

The sunglasses man glanced at her and secretly said to himself that Brother Ye’s woman was really very beautiful, he nodded: “Ok got it, San Zi, come over here, take a car and drive Brother Ye to the place where he wants to go.”

A thin man heard this and immediately responded by saying yes to him.

“If you need anything, please call me immediately and anytime.”

Ye Feng let go of her fragrant body, then stretched his body till his heart content and with a smile on his face, he immediately followed that thin man toward a van.

Su Menghan was still blushing, she didn’t know what she should say, in her heart, she was scolding Ye Feng several hundred times: Who is your woman, you shameless guy.

Regarding Ye Feng’s arrangement, she understood very well.

Seeing that taking her cousin by a motorcycle to the hospital was a big problem for his parents, so Ye Feng planned all this, leaving behind few people for her was also a convenient idea, but at the same time, it could also be considered as a way to give her protection in an unknown town while he was away.

“Quickly, take my cousin to the hospital.”

Just thinking of this, she without any hesitation quickly pointed her finger to the family of three.

Till this time, both middle-aged men and women had been stunned, they did not expect that this would be the case. Recently, Heavenly Serpent Gang had been very rampant in this area, provoking their people had always been a bad thing for anyone, but now.....

The middle-aged woman surprisingly looking at Su Menghan, a thought was running in her mind that Su Menghan was such a beautiful and attractive girl, how did she manage to maintain a relationship with that flamboyant young boy, could it be considered as normal?

At this moment, Su Menghan's image in her heart had completely transformed from an innocent young girl to a clever and smart seductress.

However, this did not matter at all right now, the middle-aged woman thought intelligently that Dai Gen could be saved only because of Su Menghan, it looked like nowadays, Su Menghan was involved in dirty business by using her good appearance. So helping them with medical

expenses should not be a big issue for her right?

At present, she just completely forgot how badly she treated Su Menghan few minutes back.

While on the contrary, Su Menghan wasn't thinking so much.

As soon as Ye Feng left, she asked those men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to arrange one more van to take her cousin Dai Gen to the hospital. However this matter was taken care by the dark sunglasses man, he did a phone call to the hospital for an ambulance.

When the two vans left, finally some of the neighbors from the neighborhood appeared, they started gossiping, pointing and discussing about what just happened.....

Chapter 029 - You Want To Blackmail Me?

Ye Feng's mind had long been drawn out of this matter.

As per the location mentioned in the red invitation letter, he directed the thin man of Heavenly Serpent Gang to take the van to a very remote village, which was almost two kilometers away from his actual destination.

Ye Feng got off the van then sent him away. Then after he found a remote deserted corner, he took out a mask which he had already prepared.

The martial arts existed in this modern world but had been kept hidden from the rest of the world. Ye Feng believed that no one would their true identities in this trade fair.

If he were to use the camouflage technique to transform his appearance, then at his current level, he wouldn't be able to hold it for a longer period of time. So, it would not be an appropriate idea to fully rely on it.

After putting on the mask, he ran all the way towards the target location. After nonstop running for ten minutes, he arrived in front of quite an ancient looking courtyard.

At the entrance of the courtyard stood a handsome young man, he was there looking around in all directions, and suddenly, his eyes stuck on Ye

Feng. He raised his eyebrows and started observing him.

“Who are you sir?”

That handsome man opened his mouth to ask, it was really a bit effeminate. Besides, there was a mole on his chin which made him appear incomparably outwardly submissive but inwardly evil-hearted.

“Mo Jiuge.”

Ye Feng answered in a low voice.

He certainly wouldn't use his real name until he was clear about the situation. This name 'Mo Jiuge' was the name of the guy whom he used to dislike the most when he was in the World of Immortals. It was because that guy was the fiancé of his beautiful master.

Ye Feng guessed that in the future, he would definitely do lots of things to offend several people, then those people would blame Mo Jiuge for all those things.

He also thought that when his cultivation would reach higher levels then he would transform himself into the appearance of Mo Jiuge and would deceive people.

“Mo Jiuge? Never heard of this name.”

The handsome young man glanced at him disdainfully, he wasn't a bit

interested in his appearance.

“Here is the invitation card.”

Seeing his reaction Ye Feng took out the invitation card at once.

“Oh? This invitation card is originally meant for Huang Lao, anyway go in.

The handsome young man took his invitation card and looked at him again with a lot better attitude, he waved his hand to beckon Ye Feng to enter the courtyard.

Ye Feng pretended to be very normal, he strolled in by passing by that handsome young man. When he came inside, at that time, he really sensed the breath of martial artists of this world, apparently it seemed like the right place.

“Huang Lao, he must be the friend of Uncle Ou.....”

Ye Feng thought to himself, after entering the courtyard, there was only one path leading to a dilapidated wooden house, however it didn't seem like a place where trade fair could be conducted.

But when he entered the house, he saw one side of the cabin had a passage leading to the underground, although it was hidden but was a very beautiful spot.

“Wan’er, you finally came, we have been waiting for you for a long time.”

Just then, it seemed like that handsome young man saw someone and was quite excited.

Ye Feng was very curious, he turned his head to look and what he actually saw was one group of people just enter the courtyard which was unexpectedly headed by – that lovable oval faced beautiful young girl! It seemed as if that handsome young boy was very respectful to her.

This startled Ye Feng, he didn’t dare to stay there any longer and he quickly walked along the passage.

Although the passage was very long and narrow, but what appeared before Ye Feng was a spacious underground hall, it was brilliantly illuminated, obvious modernized breath headed on, but in the hall the person’s shadow was flickering. At a glance it looked like there were over a hundred people.

Ye Feng, wearing a mask, slowly walked in, he looked around in all the directions and felt that the hall was similar to a vegetable market, people were there everywhere with their stall properly set up, but not arbitrarily complex and chaotic, instead it was neat and orderly.

It wasn’t the case that all of the people present in the hall were from the world of martial arts, such as in front of Ye Feng, there was a stall of fat man, he was really extremely fat and was constantly crying out to sell his things.

Ye Feng saw that the fat man was selling something like antiques, but his Ancient dragon Sword Ring didn't react at all. It seemed like these things were of no use to Ye Feng, but was really attracting the attention of many people, they were busy in negotiating and asking prices.

“This fat person should be similar to the status of Uncle Ou, I don't know from where do they get lots of antiques, and on top of that, they also expect to sell them at the high prices at this trade fair

Ye Feng shook his head and turned around to leave.

In such type of place, as long as there were useful things, the price would never be lowered, basically those who were qualified to participate in such a trade fair would surely make a lot of money, for example Uncle Ou A had half a spirit stone.

“Buddy, come this way.”

Just then, suddenly, a wretched thin man appeared in front of Ye Feng and said furtively: “I picked up a sky blue and white porcelain in the morning, would you like to go and have a look?”

Ye Feng saw his wretched appearance, he seemed monkey-like and fragile, with little to none cultivation whatsoever. Ye Feng did not know what the reason for him to be so careful, why didn't he want to expose his goods in front of everyone?

That sky blue and white porcelain must be something good but Ye Feng had no idea about it, neither did he care.

Ye Feng was a bit worried since no one had informed him anything about the martial arts thing, however meeting this guy was somehow good for him. He slightly nodded and followed the thin man. They eventually came to a remote corner in the hall.

Everyone in the hall were busy discussing about their own respective matters, nobody noticed them radically, however occasionally some people noticed them and also casted strange looks at them, but finally ignored them altogether.

“Look, this is the best quality sky blue and white porcelain, just eating this can promote one’s cultivation equal to five years worth of cultivation. It costs you only five million, fair trade honestly.”

The thin man pulled out a plant from the cloth bag on his waist and said with a smile.

Ye Feng took a look, what the heck was this best quality sky blue and white porcelain, wasn’t this just a fragrant-flowered garlic? He had come from the world of Immortals, how he could get confused between fragrant-flowered garlic and medicinal herbs.

“You want to deceive me?”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed coldly with anger, he said in an angry voice.

“Is this how a chivalrous person speaks? This is the sky blue and white porcelain, you saw it already, now you don’t want to buy it? Things don’t

work this way.”

The thin man sneered loudly then he turned his head to the other side and hinted Ye Feng to look in that direction.

Ye Feng tilted his head in that direction, and to his surprise, he saw two ferocious men, with bare upper bodies, standing at one side. At this time, both of them were looking fiercely at him as if Ye Feng was a lamb, ready to be slaughtered.

“Hey buddy, do you know them?”

The thin man proudly said: “Jiangsu duo, they are called Tornado axe and Wolf sword, it is said that they have taken dozens of human lives! This sky blue and white porcelain is being sold on their request.....”

Obviously, Ye Feng was not dumb to not under his current situation?

Unexpectedly, it was blackmail!

Perhaps at this trade fair, this Jiangsu duo would not dare to attack. But clearly, if Ye Feng refused to buy this fragrant-flower garlic with 5 million now, then when he would leave the trade fair, they might come to trouble him.

Tornado axe seemed like an overwhelming guy, he looked quite ugly and ferocious-looking. There was a large and conspicuous double ax on his back. Wolf sword looks vicious, like an experienced killed who must have fought numerous battles without a doubt.

Ye Feng was standing far away from them, so it was a bit difficult to figure out how many years of cultivation they had, but still it could be estimated that their cultivation was quite highPresently he had no chance of winning against them, hence only sneak attacks would be worth a little.

Supposing, this thin man was considering Ye Feng as a greatly fat sheep (means extremely rich), what a pity, Ye Feng was just a cultivator, aiming to become an immortal, how could he possibly get trapped in this blackmail? Moreover, he could not manage to arrange five million anyway.

Suddenly an idea hit his mind, soon he thought of a safe escape strategy. As for now, he might as well try to actually draw out something from this fellow's mouth.

“If you don't want to die, answer my questions.”

Ye Feng groaned coldly, and in an instant, he grabbed the collar of the other party and said: “If you compel me, I, your father, will have to kill you first.”

Hearing this, the thin man shivered with fear.

Chapter 030 - Long Wan'er

Not far away, Jiangsu duo were standing, the sudden action of Ye Feng startled them. Although they were involved in all kinds of evil, but still in this trade fair, which was conducted by Long Wan'er, they could not dare to cause trouble in the hall.

(Lastvoice: 'Long' means 'Dragon' so this trade fair is being conducted by someone from Dragon family)

Therefore, they did not act rashly.

But that thin man was being forced by Ye Feng, but similarly, even he didn't dare to raise hue and cry. Because he was wrong in the first place, and if this matter caused commotion and came in the knowledge of Long Wan'er that they were blackmailing people in this trade fair, then all three of them would face serious consequences.

Shortly after that, Ye Feng got some satisfactory answers from the thin man.

It turned out that in China, there existed a hidden world of martial arts, a circle of martial artists, where people could practice martial arts, however there were also people like this thin man and that fat merchant, who did not practice martial arts at all but knew about this secret world.

Nowadays, all the major schools and families used to respect just their own value, outsiders had no means to obtain the martial art heart sutra

from these major schools and families, so for outsiders, practicing martial arts was impossible. Revealing one's heart sutra to outsiders was considered a big crime in the world of martial artists, and any such group or family was treated as a traitor and immediately disposed by the rest of the martial arts community.

Thus, in China, those who practiced martial arts were honored and held very high status and respect.

The strength division was the same in this world and in the World of the Immortals, but when it would to the practice of martial arts then martial artist in this world used inner qi rather than zhenqi.

Ye Feng had felt a strange power flowing inside the body of the oval faced maiden, which was different than zhenqi. However the power of inner qi was only half of the power of zhenqi. So now that Ye Feng had the cultivation of one-and-a-half year, he could easily compete with those martial artists of China, who possessed three years worth of cultivation or less!

Of course, willingly doing that would be none other than being stupid and reckless.

Ye Feng believes that whether it was agility type or other type of martial arts, the martial arts of this world were definitely inferior to the martial arts from the World of the Immortals. With the help of an immortal technique like 'Rapid shadow trace' and the red zhenqi sword of Dragon Sword Ancient Ring, if he had to play a sneak attack, no matter how much high the cultivation of his enemy was, he would be able to deal with them.

Finally, he inquired about “Huang Lao” and left the corner once he was satisfied.

Jiangsu duo was watching from the sidelines, they remembered this masked man firmly. This fellow dared to not give them face, so they would wait until the trade fair was over then kill him!

.....

Ye Feng returned to the venue and soon found Huang Lao.

He saw an old man standing before a stall with his eyes closed, wearing a grey robe, was over sixty years of age, had grizzled hair and beard.

The old man had very vigorously and tightly gripped his both hands. Ye Feng took a quick look at them and noticed that Huang Lao’s hands were truly amazing and very powerful, hinting that he must have been practicing Kung Fu for a long time.

Huang Lao was an old friend of Ou A. He was also the person who arranged the invitation letter for Ou A, currently being used by Ye Feng. He had come from Zhejiang province, Mt. Tianzhu. Currently, he was 65 years old, he began cultivation when he was 40 years old and now he had 30 years of cultivation. He was an expert of palm method.

Ye Feng previously wanted to stay away from him, but now he decided to rely on Huang Lao.

Beside Huang Lao, there was a clever-looking young man standing at a stall and was dealing with that thin man from earlier. It seemed like he was the apprentice of Huang Lao.

Ye Feng stepped forward to look at their booth, but suddenly a pitch black broken blade caught his attention.

“Is this actually a sharp weapon?”

In the World of the Immortals, magic weapons were used by martial cultivators, but the point was that the magic weapons were very difficult to find, and not everyone could have them. Moreover under the category of magic weapons, the weapons were also divided into two ranks – ordinary weapons and sharp weapons.

The examples of ordinary weapons were kitchen knife, fruit knife, butcher knife *etc.* But the sharp weapons of a certain level held the power to cut even the iron like mud or easily cut the hair, for example in the ancient times, there was a rumor that there existed ten great swords in Chinese country, and as per the estimate of Ye Feng, the modern ordinary firearms were probably at this level.

So in other words, it could be said that the might of the pitch black broken blade, which was there on Huang Lao’s stall, might be compared favorably with an ordinary pistol!

Unfortunately, it was a broken weapon.

“Hello friend.”

At this moment, that clever youth saw Ye Feng coming toward their stall, he hurriedly stacked a smile on his face and began explanation: “This pitch black blade has been following master for many years, although it is broken now, but it still used to be at a sharp weapon rank, if you want it then you can have it for 100 million.”

Hearing him saying 100 million so casually, Ye Feng smacked his lips, 100 million?

It seemed like the people belonging to the martial arts world of China were really very rich, that was the reason why even a Broken Blade was being sold so expensively, if it would have been intact then they would surely sell it for 800 million.

No wonder why the other people would shake their heads before moving away from this stall, obviously because this Broken Blade wasn't worth the price. They were selling it so expensive because Huang Lao still was emotionally attached to it.

“Don't mind me, I'm just looking around.”

Ye Feng smiled and shook his head, then he asked from that young man: “I have some compounded drugs, but I have no stall to place them, could you place them in your stall? Then you will be entitled to 30% of the total sales”.

He then turned around and found that in the entire, there were very few people selling the compounded drugs personally, this made him chuckle to himself. He had arrived in this world, almost half a month

ago, and depending on the resources provided by Heavenly Serpent Gang, he managed to obtain lots of expensive and rare medicinal herbs. Finally, he used a technique from the World of the Immortals and his own zhenqi to produce some crude compounded drugs.

These compounded drugs had of great benefits, they could be used in treatment of various internal injuries and wounds, to restore zhenqi and so on. Of course, since these drugs were of extreme help in recovery of zhenqi so he kept few for his own use, while the remaining drugs were supposed to pull out money from the selling point.

“This.....”

At first, the young man hesitated a bit then said: “Only master can make a decision regarding this matter.”

The compounded drugs were quite rare in the world of martial arts and this masked man (i.e. Ye Feng) said that he wanted to sell them? If any problem occurred then others would surely blame Mt. Tianzhu.

Ye Feng looked at Huang Lao who was sitting nearby with his eyes closed. He thought, if at this time, some people performed an experiment then it would be good. His compounded drug's main effects could come in play only when the drug was mixed properly with the qi, but achieving this was way too difficult for others, moreover his compounded drug was extremely good in healing flesh wounds.

Just when he was thinking about all this, at the same time, suddenly two people started quarrelling in the venue hall. They were not far away from the stall where Ye Feng was standing.

One was a dark skinned young man and other person was a fat middle-aged man, clad in a western-style suit. The reason of quarrel was a mutual disagreement between them which later led to the mutual accusation on each other, thus this thing later on grew stronger and stronger, and finally resulted into a quarrel.

“Maybe I should add fire to the fuel and make them fight and hit each other? If someone gets injured then only I can test my drug’s effect. I will test it in the form of demonstration, which will also act as a convenient advertisement.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind.

Just when he wanted to act, a moist and crisp voice suddenly transmitted from the entrance hall. The voice belonged to a female and sounded very sweet, just like the voice of an oriole: “Hey you two, you are causing trouble in the trade fair hosted by our Dragon clan, are you so impatient to die?”

The crisp female voice, all of a sudden, attracted everyone’s attention.

Ye Feng looked up, indeed she was the same lovable oval faced young girl, she walked into the hall together with several people. They all moved toward that dark skinned young man and middle-aged fat person, who were quarreling.

“Long Wan’er has arrived!”

“Long Wan’er is here!”

People screamed one after another.

Ye Feng finally got to know that the oval faced maiden’s name was actually Long Wan’er.

Still wearing the white blue skirt, wrapped tight around her delicate body, her front pair was plentifully tall and straight as if the cotton material was about to burst. The twins were stretched closely and squeezing too tightly into each other like they existed just to seduce men. The men on the scene couldn’t help but swallow their own saliva.

Ye Feng couldn’t help thinking of that day in the hotel when he had probed her chest to search for the golden leaf grass, the touch of that soft creamy and rich elasticity.....

Could it be that this Long Wan’er had quite a distinguished and honored identity?

“Well, maybe others are afraid of your Dragon clan but I am not.”

Just then, a cold fiery voice came out, it was the voice of that dark skinned young man who was in the quarrel a moment ago. He was exhibiting a very arrogant look at Long Wan’er.

His words caused a commotion among the people in the hall!

“Oh really?”

Long Wan'er showed a faint smile while slowly walking toward him.

Chapter 031 - Swift And Fierce Sword

Ye Feng was not a bit interested in beautiful women, but as he knew very clearly that irrespective of which world he was in, the strength was the most important thing. He didn't want to think too much about this stuff before he acquired enough strength.

For example, at present that dark skinned capable-looking young man was going to face tragedy.

“Do not attract my attention this way.”

Long Wan'er moved towards the opposite party, while curling up the corners of her mouth as she said: “I, Long Wan'er, am not interested in men who are weaker than me.”

As soon as that dark skinned young man listened to what she said, immediately, his complexion changed.

Indeed, like she just said, he already had the intention to attract the attention of her just by causing commotion to stir things up, but at this moment, he didn't expect that it would be easily seen through by her.

“Just because you spoke words of provocation to provoke me, it doesn't mean you really sincerely convinced me, that statement of yours isn't enough.”

Long Wan'er smiled tenderly: “I have heard that the boxing technique

of God Fist Sect is matchless, it just so happens that I feel like testing it myself.”

Her voice just fell, and right then, everyone saw her fragrant body instantly rotating once, and in a flash, her leg swept towards that dark skinned young man, swiftly like the wind!

The dark skinned young man was totally speechless when he saw her displaying such a quick movement, however, he immediately took a stance and started condensing his entire body's qi in his fists. Actually, he wanted to use Chinese boxing to block her kick.

But before he could even think about throwing a punch, her fierce kick swept on his face, and she simultaneously used her other leg to kick him on his both legs, throwing him off balance and he suddenly and heavily fell on the ground. This whole thing happened very fast and neatly!

Ye Feng was watching everything from one side, he felt a slight faint pain in his chest. This scene reminded him of the incident, which happened days ago in the hotel room. Wasn't he also kicked in a similar fashion by Long Wan'er?

She then landed, her skirt slightly hiked up, revealing a pair of her sleek and smooth white calves, plus a pair of sandals on her exquisite delicate feet, each and every man standing around was staring at this sight without moving an inch, as if they were mummified.

8 years of cultivation.

At this time, just by watching her in action, Ye Feng got an idea about the strength of Long Wan'er. A mere thought about her true strength startled him a bit. Her kicking style was exquisite, her speed was extremely fast, she was remarkably swift and flexible, was this martial arts?

But right now, he somewhat hesitated.

One of the two main objectives that dragged him here to this trade fair was to inquire about the existence of martial arts in this world, which was basically completed. Another objective was to find the things he could use to enhance his cultivation, but unfortunately, he could not find anything useful until now.

And he also wanted to sell these compounded drugs. Ye Feng wouldn't have any hesitation if Long Wan'er had not been here. However, now, he was running out of time to show off, not to mention if she recognized him then he would be in serious trouble.

For a while, he deeply thought about it then finally decided to give up on selling his compounded drugs, it wasn't money that he needed right now, because the most important thing for him currently was his own safety.

“Well, our Dragon Clan has organized this small trade fair, so all of the guests will have to maintain an order and refrain from making trouble for us.”

She finished saying this with a sweet smile on her face then looked around and Ye Feng's mask suddenly caught her attention. She slightly

paused for a moment then turned away thinking that participating in the trade fair with a mask on, perhaps he wanted to keep his identity a secret.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng heaved a sigh of relief when he saw her turning away.

Long Wan'er and other disciples of Dragon clan began to maintain order in the venue hall so that no one would dare to cause any trouble again. Meanwhile, that thin man, along with the Jiangsu Duo, was ready to leave the trade fair, but before leaving the hall, he maliciously stared at Ye Feng.

Ye Feng sneered secretly in his heart, so they wanted to gang up on him outside the trade fair? It won't be an easy task for them.

After that, he put on an act of randomly strolling around and checking out stuff.

In the entire trade fair, most of the stuff was jade ore concentrates, as well as some superficial compounded drugs. Except Huang Lao's pitch black broken Blade, mostly everything was being sold at tens of thousands or several hundred thousand. There were few good medicinal herbs with good healing effect but they were being sold at 3 million.

Apart from a veteran martial arts user like Huang Lao, the rest people present there were all young martial artists, along with some people like thin man, who only did business in the secret world of Chinese martial arts.

Ye Feng looked towards Huang Lao and saw that Huang Lao was walking with Long Wan'er and talking about something. He couldn't help but shook his head since his original plan was to rely on his compounded drugs to attract the attention of Huang Lao and form a relationship with him, so that in future, he could use this powerful connection to scare off Jiangsu Duo or any other possible threats that he might encounter in the world of martial arts.

But now, there was no need for that anymore. Even without Huang Lao, Ye Feng was confident enough to get rid of this Jiangsu Duo, because while he was wandering around in the trade fair, when he inquired about the so-called Jiangsu duo, he found out they only had 5 years of cultivation, hence he should be able to deal with them.

These two guys were villains, many people had heard about their ferocity, they had taken dozens of lives, they would rob everything from the victims, also, no one knew how many young girls had been raped by them. If the time would come to dispose them off then Ye Feng wouldn't mind to remove few harmful pests from the world of martial arts.

Just when he was about to leave the trade fair, suddenly his phone rang. He pulled out to take a look, it was Su Menghan's call. This call was quite unexpected so quickly replied: "Hello?"

"Ye Feng! Ye Feng, where are you, come quickly to the People's Hospital....."

Su Menghan's hurriedly said in her crisp voice and immediately hung up the call, it seemed like there was some urgent matter.

Not good!

Ye Feng didn't think that she would hang up the phone like this, he instantly moved towards the doorway of the hall and hurriedly walked out of it. He was not worried about what was going on with Su Menghan, actually what worried him was that Su Menghan called out his name very loudly on the phone.

Meanwhile, Huang Lao and Long Wan'er were busy with their conversation, but when they suddenly heard these two words "Ye Feng", they hurriedly turned towards him and saw him moving out in a hurry.

"Stop right there!"

The complexion of Long Wan'er suddenly changed!

From the report of Chief Liu, she already knew about the name 'Ye Feng', besides she also knew that the golden leaf grass from the previous time was also taken by him. Although, she had promised that old man that she would no longer pursue him, however there was a condition!

Now that Ye Feng had come on his own initiative, how could she possibly let him off so easily?

"Stop him!"

She pursued Ye Feng hastily, the handsome youth was also with her, but his strength was not enough and his agility skill was more rotten, not only he could not keep up with Long Wan'er instead he stumbled and

almost fell down. Right then, several disciples of Dragon clan saw Long Wan'er pursuing a masked man and also began to pursue him.

In the hall, there were over a hundred of people, they were all startled by this sudden commotion, they were confused and trying to guess the identity of this masked man, who made Long Wan'er so impatient.

Huang Lao wrinkled his eyebrows but didn't seem to care about it and continued to keep his eyes close and sit in repose.

At one side, the clever-looking youth was watching everything, he was lucky since he didn't allow the masked man to place his compounded drugs in his stall or else wouldn't it be like offending the Dragon Clan? Everyone knew that in today's flourishing martial arts world, offending such a powerful and influential Dragon Clan was just like willingly courting death!

.....

Ye Feng ran along the passage of the hall, he was very vigilant in his heart as he was well aware that Jiangsu duo must be waiting for him outside the hall to ambush him, and he also had to worry about pursuers.

He tightened the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring on his finger, then took out several compounded drugs from his pocket and tossed them into his mouth. He started taking counter measures beforehand as he was expecting the fight to begin quite soon.

The moment he ran out of the small log cabin, he saw the two figures

were standing proudly in front of him. One person was holding a double axe, known as Tornado axe, and the other man was with a sword, also known as Wolf sword, together known as Jiangsu duo! However they didn't know that it was someone called Ye Feng under this mask and Long Wan'er was pursuing him. So they weren't paying much attention to him, but both of them still appeared very ferocious, one must know that they were peerless villains and their hands were stained with blood of several people.

“Boy, handover your money, leave behind an arm, then you can leave this place!”

Tornado axe was trying to threaten Ye Feng to hand over the money, also giving him a hint that if he would try to offend the so called Jiangsu Duo, then the result could be fatal.

But Ye Feng didn't pay attention to them since he knew that a very dangerous pursuing team, led by Long Wan'er, was after him.

It was already too late!

He didn't want to be overtaken, so his only option now.....

In an instant, Ye Feng took his decision, he started channeling his zhenqi and condensing it simultaneously in his feet and also in his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring', meanwhile he cast out 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' leaving behind only a faint blurred afterimage, and at the same time, the 'Red Ancient Sword' flashed out!

The red flash startled Tornado axe, his heart was beating very fast, he hurriedly turned his head to his side and saw that his companion, Wolf sword, who had been with him for so many years, had his head chopped off and his headless body was spurting blood everywhere.

It was Ye Feng's swift and fierce sword attack!

Chapter 032 - Pursuit

When Long Wan'er came outside running all the way, she happened to see that greedy Wolf Sword, the sword in his hand was broken into two parts, and with a "bang", they soon soon fell on the ground, accompanied by his headless corpse falling on the ground as well. The whole courtyard was bathed in fresh blood.

Meanwhile that masked man, Ye Feng, was already out the courtyard and running away.

"Quick!"

Tornado Axe was sweating all over just by imagining that if Ye Feng's goal was him, then it would be his headless body lying on the ground!

He killed a man in just one sword strike.

"You guys deal with him, I will pursue him."

Long Wan'er clenched her teeth, and in a flash, her beautiful figure fluttered out of the courtyard and rushed towards Ye Feng to catch him up.

But now she had some suspicions that the guy in the mask might not be that Ye Feng from the hotel room. Because she knew, Ye Feng was a high school student who was easily be caught by the police. But this masked man could skillfully use a sword and so easily killed a very skilled

swordsman, who was supposed to have five years of cultivation. No matter how flamboyant a newbie was, it should be impossible to progress so fast.

Long wan'er must investigate about this masked man who killed someone in the trade fair or else wouldn't it ruin the reputation of Dragon clan?

Several juniors from the Dragon clan came outside, but they remain startled after seeing the headless corpse of Wolf sword, however they immediately went into action. First of all, they must make sure that the corpse won't be found by the city police, their second aim was to catch the murderer to settle this case.

The Tornado axe's whole body was soaked up in cold sweat, he had never experienced such a moment where he was so close to death. When he came back to his senses, he found himself sitting in a small room while in front of him, there were several people of Dragon clan. They were inquiring him about what exactly happened there few minutes back.

He did not dare to conceal anything from them, he explained everything very hastily: "Earlier in the venue hall, we blackmailed that masked man, later he came out with his sword and killed my brother....."

"Did he use just a sword to kill him?"

Some people started inquiring.

“Yes, a red sword.”

Tornado axe nodding his head.

“His sword cut off Wolf sword’s long sword into two parts quite easily. It seems that his sword is a sharp weapon, such a character is rarely seen nowadays.”

Some people frowned hearing his speculation.

“I know the identity of that man.”

Just then, the door of that small room opened up and that handsome young man from earlier rushed in. While panting heavily he said: “He is called ‘Mo Jiuge’ and has the invitation card of Huang Lao

“Huang Lao?”

The Dragon clan’s people started looking at each other in bafflement, their complexion also changed since they knew it was very difficult to deal with that old man, Huang Lao.

.....

On the other side, the compounded drugs, swallowed by Ye Feng in the hall’s passage in order to restore his Zhenqi, took some time dissolving in his blood, but by now, they began restoring his consumed Zhenqi in the meridians.

He kept on running all the way, and soon he covered several kilometers and finally reached Langfang city centre. This place was crowded which was very convenient for his escape by blending in. This was one of lessons he had learned from the many years of experience in his own world.

However, that remote village was still 34 kilometres away from the city centre. So, until he reached that place he had to ensure that he wouldn't get captured by his strong pursuer, Long Wan'er, in the meantime.

“Stinky girl, I cannot imagine how quickly she is chasing me.”

Ye Feng turned back to take a look and actually saw the beautiful figure of Long Wan'er, wearing a long skirt. She was running after him really very fast. In the absence of the technique 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace', even if he had been running at his maximum speed, he still wouldn't stand any chance against her speed.

Long Wan'er had a total 8 years of cultivation which could be felt from the tyrannical aura around her. Although she was a female, but she was running at an incredible high speed and moreover with light footsteps that not a trace of dust was spreading out. Just like the gentle flow of wind, she was getting close to him second by second.

“Ye Feng, stop right there!”

Ye Feng heard her clear and melodious voice.

“Girl of the Dragon clan, you have got the wrong guy.”

He said this in a very low and deep voice. Obviously, he was trying to hide his true identity from her.

“Humph, it doesn’t matter who you are, your methods are cruel, you are an enemy of the martial arts world!”

She snorted lightly and it could be seen that she was gradually getting closer and closer to Ye Feng.

Hearing her saying such things caused disdain in his heart, could his methods be called cruel? In the World of the Immortals, no one was blamed even if someone was to kill a person or erase an entire family and so on. Moreover, in the current situation, it was the other party who annoyed him first, so naturally he couldn’t stop himself from behaving like he did. It what he did was cruel then so be it.

If he had not used that method to kill that greedy Wolf Sword, then the Jiangsu due would have ganged up on him and wouldn’t let him pass through, ultimately, he wouldn’t have been able to escape from there and would have been captured by Dragon clan.

He didn’t like the feeling of being captured by someone.

“Right now, my cultivation is still too low. Before I get powerful, I should make sure to annoy the people of Chinese martial arts world as little as possible and only when there’s a scope of getting treasures to promote my cultivation.....”

In order to kill Wolf Sword, he had to use 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' along with his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring'. The overall zhenqi consumption was enormous, even the meridians present in his legs were a little bit sore. Under this current level of his cultivation, activating 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' once again would not be easy for him.

If he had the cultivation of five years, he could not only use 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' several times but he could also easily escape from Long Wan'er.

Something ran across his mind and he started looking for a narrow alley around him so that he could escape from her. She was just 10 metres behind him and if this trend would keep up then it would become impossible for him to get away from her.

Just by swallowing few compounded drugs, less than half of his zhenqi was restored. That pumped up the fire of strength in Ye Feng, and all of a sudden, he stopped, quickly turned around and fired a punch!

Long Wan'er, who was also running after him at a very speed, suddenly arrived very close to him and noticed this sudden and surprise attack, which startled her for a second. Before she could react, Ye Feng's fist, which was extremely fast, arrived in front of her in a fraction of a second!

Meanwhile, Ye Feng was busy in condensing his entire body's zhenqi into his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring'. He had a feeling in advance that the other party was going to dodge his attack surely, so he had already planned to use his sword simultaneously with his punch. Suddenly, the red light flashed and a red zhenqi sword instantly congealed out from the

ring!

Tear it up!

Long Wan'er possessed eight years of cultivation and it was not just for show, even if she was in this urgent situation, she instinctively used her agility technique to barely avoid the danger at the key moment.

However, after the red sword light flashed, the thin cotton cloth on her chest was actually cut and formed an opening, suddenly exposing the snow-white color of her bare chest, which was now in the direct view of Ye Feng.

Suddenly, Long Wan'er realized something and shouted angrily: "You are courting your death!"

Hurriedly she used her hand to cover the front of her chest to cover up her snow-white skin from getting all exposed, while her eyes were constantly staring at Ye Feng. And at the same time, she also flung her leg to kick him!

Ye Feng thought, since he had already felt the touch of her chest, so what was the big deal if he saw it?

Ye Feng was actually in a surprised state since his sword attack completely failed to achieve the desired result. Her reaction time and agility skill were obviously beyond his expectation.

Seeing her kick coming at him, he rolled back and dodged the kick from

her beautiful leg. He once again exhausted his entire body's zhenqi to congeal the red zhenqi sword so that he could hold it for a longer period.

But she managed to clearly see the weapon in Ye Feng's hand and quickly went few steps back.

In her life, she had never seen an expert like this masked man, who could manipulate his qi so flexibly to handle a sharp weapon. In the martial arts world, the existence of such an expert was simply like going against the heaven's will. Not even those old seniors with decades of cultivation could achieve such a level of expertise in qi manipulation.

Ye Feng had an upper-hand in this battle, he was continuously wielding his sword and swinging horizontally, although this was a very chaotic form of swordplay, but she had to be very careful while dealing with it. But accidentally, he cut open the white bottom of her skirt, thereby exposing her two very beautiful snow-white legs, which unwillingly attracted his eyes towards them.

Long Wan'er was breathless and furious at this moment. She must hide her exposed snow-white flesh, so there was no way to display her true strength.

Just in a moment, several holes appeared on her white skirt and her snow-white skin was visible from everywhere, her skin was extremely attractive. While on the other side, Ye Feng's condensed zhenqi in his sword got exhausted and his red zhenqi sword suddenly disappeared without a trace.

“Let's see how you chase now.”

Ye Feng smiled and started running at once.

Chapter 033 - Win An Inch, Want A Foot

Originally, Ye Feng wanted to injure Long Wan'er to prevent her from chasing after him. But the current situation was comparatively better than his original plan. Now, there were lots of holes in her long skirt. Clad in this semi torn skirt, if she still kept on pursuing him, then her snow-white beautiful skin would certainly attract attention of the huge crowd present in that area, which was obviously not something a girl could endure easily.

Ye Feng turned back and saw her beautiful figure gradually disappearing in the distance. While on the other side, Long Wan'er was extremely angry, she was bitterly stamping her feet on the ground. With one hand, she was trying to hide her plump and white chest and her other hand was trying to cover her legs. While doing so, she was looking around while clenching her teeth tightly to think deeply about some countermeasures.

So, should she just let him run away like this?

This was impossible!

.....

Ye Feng kept on running all the way, and very soon, he reached the main road. He had already thrown away his mask and his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring' was back to normal. He then stopped a taxi and went directly to the People's Hospital.

Together with Heavenly Serpent Gang, Su Menghan took her cousin to the People's Hospital, but what happened after that, Ye Feng did not know anything. What actually happened there which forced her to call him so impatiently? Due to that, he was almost captured.

Fortunately, Long Wan'er did not continue to pursue him. But Ye Feng knew that Su Menghan's actions were not intentional.

Ye Feng got out of taxi right at the entrance of People's Hospital. He thought of first finding a place to buy new clothes so that he could change his clothes before entering the hospital. He then called Su Menghan and asked: "What happened?"

"They have started fighting again, my cousin has been found addicted to drugs, please come quickly"

Su Menghan almost immediately picked up the phone and anxiously replied.

Ye Feng hung up the phone and quickly rushed inside. He quickly arrived at the nearby ward where Su Menghan and other were present.

He looked around and discovered that on both sides of the hospital ward entrance, a dispute was going on between the parents of Dai Gen and the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang. While Su Menghan was caught up in the middle of all this chaos, she was anxiously trying to settle this dispute all by herself.

The quarrel had also attracted the surrounding people to flock near the

ward entrance.

“You people are the reason behind my son’s bad condition, you must take responsibility for this!”

Dai Gen’s mother was acting very rudely like a vixen. Since she was in power now, she had no intention to forgive them, thus she was making this unreasonable scene in the hospital.

“How are we responsible for this?”

The man in black sunglasses asked while suppressing his anger.

“At least pay for the damages, or do you want to just hit people and forget about it?”

Dai Gen’s mother was looking at the sunglasses man in a threatening manner, since Su Menghan was on her side so she was taking advantage of this, while, the opposite party couldn’t dare to argue with her.

“Aunt, regarding the medical expenses, I have already paid, cousin is alright now, so just let it go.”

Su Menghan was constantly persuading her Aunt to settle all this peacefully. Since she still had no idea how Ye Feng was related to Heavenly Serpent Gang. She thought that if her Aunt went too far and these men lost their cool then something tragic might happen.

“No, you still led Dai Gen towards drug addiction, so today you must take responsibility for this and pay for the damages.”

Dai Gen's mother was extremely angry and said in a bitter voice. It seemed as if the other party didn't pay up then they would certainly lose their lives at her hands.

“Dai Gen, you hang in there..... It's not good, he can't hold up anymore, cannot we give him drugs in small amount? Seeing him in this condition makes me very uncomfortable in my heart.”

The painful voice of Dai Gen's father transmitted from inside the ward as well as a shaky painful voice of Dai Gen, struggling on the bed. It was quite obvious that Dai Gen was a big drug addict, so he was struggling and craving for drugs while his father was trying to suppress him.

“No, it's not good, he cannot take drugs again.....”

Su Menghan firmly refused him. She was basically clamped between two sides, on one side were her relatives and on other side were the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was really too painful for her to deal with both sides at the same time. Now, she really felt like crying, she was really hoping for Ye Feng to come quickly.

“No, no, if something happened to him then will you take responsibility for it?”

Dai Gen's mother said this bitterly and then stared at Su Menghan, she dragged the sunglasses man hurriedly and said: “Help him quickly, he

can't bear anymore.....”

“What’s going on here?”

At this time, Ye Feng walked up to them and said. When the middle-aged woman saw him, the unruly look immediately vanished from her face and her complexion paled. Ye Feng then looked inside the hospital ward and saw a female nurse and Dai Gen’s father. Both of them were very trying their best to suppress Dai Gen to lie down on the bed.

Bulged out blue veins could be seen on Dai Gen’s whole body, he was so in so much pain that he wanted to crash into the wall to commit suicide, but actually cannot achieve it. He was unceasingly struggling and violently swinging on the bed.

Su Menghan as well as the several members of Heavenly Serpent Gang was extremely happy to see that Ye Feng was finally here, because they were all really fed up by now!

Without any hesitation, Ye Feng walked into the ward and hit on the back of Dai Gen’s head. In just one hit, instantly, the world turned very quiet and relaxing. There was no longer any struggling noise or painful screams because Dai Gen had immediately fainted on the spot.

“How could you do this to Dai Gen!”

Dai Gen’s parents simultaneously reacted and called out in alarm.

“Let him rest quietly, he will wake up after some time.”

Ye Feng indifferently said.

The nurse reached out to probe a little, but she was also relieved, because finally, the patient was in relief, and it was peaceful for other patients as well.....

Ye Feng turned back, looked at Su Menghan and members of Heavenly Serpent Gang and said: “All right, you all can go back. Su Menghan, we will leave as well. Have you paid the medical expenses?”

“Yes

Su Menghan lowered her head and looked somewhat embarrassed, because the big amount of 200,000 didn't belong to her, Ye Feng lent it to her. After admitting in the hospital, she found out that even the amount of 200,000 was insufficient so he had to request Heavenly Serpent Gang to pay the rest.

The hospital took full onetime payment for surgery, hospital expense and so on, most important was brain stem damage and even the slightest carelessness could send Dai Gen into a vegetable state. Not to mention, this was the case of drug addiction.

“Let's go.”

Ye Feng waved his hand to say goodbye to the man in black sunglasses and others. They quickly dispersed with happy expressions on their faces.

Usually, if they were to face such an unreasonable bitch, then they would have slapped her away long time ago, but just because of Ye Feng, they didn't dare to do anything and were stuck with that vixen for so long. The whole time, they simply felt like dying from extreme rage building inside them.

(Lastvoice: The above paragraph is meant for Dai Gen's mom, not Su Menghan :P)

“Hey, do not even think about leaving, you better pay for the damages, I tell you!”

Dai Gen's mother hastily rushed outside and tried to stop them.

“I warn you.”

Ye Feng noticed her talking endlessly, he suddenly looked back and said in a cold voice: “You must learn to be content, do not push your luck, do not reach out for a yard after taking an inch, do not wait to get into big trouble because at the end of such path, only regret awaits you.”

Indeed, Heavenly Serpent Gang had already done enough. Dai Gen owed them a big amount of 300,000, which they already wrote off. They also helped Su Menghan while paying the medical expenses, how could this middle-aged woman dare to ask for more?

Ye Feng's ferocious argument left Dai Gen's mother in a scared and

stupefied state, she immediately shut her mouth.

Su Menghan saw this but didn't say anything. Before, even she thought the same thing that her aunt was going too far, but she couldn't bring herself to say the same words as Ye Feng.

“Look, the matter ends here. Even if he has become a drug addict, it's not like this is not his fault at all, maybe he has his own reasons for this.”

Ye Feng said then gave a cold glance to Dai Gen's parents then held Su Menghan's frail hands and departed together with her.

Dai Gen's mother look at their back profiles while they were leaving, but even now, she was not quite convinced. She turned towards her husband and shouted: “Look at your niece, she doesn't understand a single custom of your family.”

“I wonder who doesn't understand?”

Even Dai Gen's father was unable to continue watch this. Did these people have any obligation to help them? Now, they help them out by paying more than 200,000 worth of medical expenses, when his own blood brothers were not willing to help him!

“You still talk bad about the people who helped us, you devil!”

The middle-aged woman suddenly cried: “You look at our Dai Gen, what are we supposed to do in case he slips into the vegetative state..... Even if he is cured, how are we supposed to cure his drug addiction.....?”

Dai Gen's father remained silent. He looked at his wife and thought that if something like that really happened, would her curses and scolding do any good to help them?

.....

Ye Feng and Su Menghan continued to hold hands and went all the way out of the hospital, her complexion was slightly red, she was blushing and also trying to find meaning in Ye Feng's actions. Why did he hold her hand all of a sudden, was there a deeper meaning hidden in this?

If something like this had happened earlier then she would certainly be very offensive, but after coming to Langfang and experiencing a series of events, she had actually started to accept Ye Feng in her heart.

“Ye Feng, stop!”

When they arrived at the large entrance of hospital, a beautiful figure suddenly stopped in front of the two, she was panting heavily but had finally managed to catch up with him, it was Long Wan'er!

Chapter 034 - Jealousy

At this time, Long Wan'er was clad in a relatively loose white shirt with tight clasp buttons and had put on a black lace skirt, covering up to the knee, revealing only two parts of her white smooth leg.

The price tag was still tied to the shirt collar, showing that she must have been in a hurry to buy the clothes and then she directly put on the new clothes over the previous ragged skirt, which was still tightly wrapped on the inside. Several small cloth strands was blown outside by the wind from time to time.

And, at the time, her cute ponytail was also in a somewhat disheveled condition. Her beautiful eyes were spouting fire while looking at Ye Feng, and with her head held up, she stood upright with her chest propping up a wonder arc under the loose white shirt. It seemed as if her beautiful figure was shining extraordinarily under the nightfall street light, making her appearance especially charming.

A beautiful woman was blocking the way in front of the hospital entrance so it naturally aroused the interest of many people.

“Ye Feng, who is she?”

At this time, Su Menghan seemed very anxious. When she saw Long Wan'er, all of a sudden, she became vigilant and tightened her grip on Ye Feng's hand.

She could not help thinking, what did Ye Feng actually do? Why did this woman in disheveled look come looking for him and looked angry as well?

Originally, she was very pleased to hold hands with Ye Feng but now it seemed like Ye Feng was already tangled up with another woman.

“It’s you?”

When Ye Feng saw Long Wan’er, he did not panic and said: “So it’s you, what’s the matter, are you being chased down by someone?”

This, of course, was an act in order to get rid of the suspicion of him being the murderer.

He had already taken off the mask and changed clothes before entering the hospital, plus he also had a trump card. Basically, he had enough confidence to make the opposite party to not suspect him temporarily.

Long Wan’er lightly snorted while her eyes were covetously fixated on him: “Stop acting and come with me, do not compel me to take severe measures!”

“Crazy bitch, Su Menghan, let’s ignore her and leave.”

Ye Feng gave her a baffled look then clasped Su Menghan’s soft hands to leave.

But Ye Feng never thought that at this moment, Su Menghan was extremely jealous of Long Wan'er. There was a fire of jealousy burning inside her heart, she instantly suppressed the feeling of gratefulness in her heart towards Ye Feng and threw off his hand. She stared at him and said: "First you make it clear, what's this all about."

Ye Feng didn't have a choice so he had to say: "Last time, I saw her faint near the school so I helped her by renting a hotel room for her to rest, but that Tian Youliang gave false report to the police"

Su Menghan immediately remembered of how the last time, Tian Youliang had publicized the news about Ye Feng being involved in prostitution. So this was the real story behind that rumor?

But then why did this beautiful woman in disheveled appearance come looking for him and why did she look so angry? She felt that Ye Feng was deceiving her, but when she looked into his eyes, suddenly, her heart thumped. It seemed like deep down in her heart, she believed in him.

Anyway, Ye Feng wanted to get rid of this disheveled beauty, right? Regarding her other questions, she would ask later.

"Ok, let's go."

A sweet smile bloomed on Su Menghan's face and she held his arm to leave.

Long Wan'er saw this and was still stubbornly blocking their way: "You don't want to acknowledge? Well."

As the eminent leader of the younger generation of Dragon clan, she always had a vigorous and resolute disposition. At this time, when she saw that Ye Feng stubbornly refused to acknowledge his crime, she suddenly lifted her right leg and aimed a heavy cross-kick at Ye Feng!

When Ye Feng saw the kick aimed at him, without any hesitation, he immediately pulled Su Menghan behind himself and boldly stood there to take on her kick.

“Bang” With a loud sound, Ye Feng received the heavy kick on the waist and his entire body was sent flying several meters away, then heavily fell on the ground.

“Ye Feng!”

Su Menghan was extremely shocked, she quickly ran up to him and held him. She actually saw fresh blood flowing out from the corners of his mouth. The blood clearly indicated that he was seriously injured.

“What?”

Long Wan'er frowned, why didn't he resist? If he was really that masked man who killed Wolf sword in a blink of an eye, then it would have been very easy for him to dodge her kick. In the event of not dodging her kick, it was possible for him to have died on the spot!

She quickly walked forward and caught Ye Feng's wrist, then began to inspect his inner qi.

(Lastvoice: Ye Feng has 'zhenqi' which is two times stronger than 'Inner qi')

Soon, her complexion slightly changed.

“Ordinary person?”

Long Wan'er pulled back her hand, bitterly turned around, hesitated for a moment then finally left.

Su Menghan, who was standing nearby, seemed vigilant and ready to act anytime. She was annoyed in her heart when she Long Wan'er escaping from there. She decided to report this to the police right away but changed her mind because right now, taking care of Ye Feng was the most important thing for her.

“Ye Feng, are you okay?”

Su Menghan leaned forward and asked in a worried tone.

“I am fine.....help me in finding a place to rest”

Ye Feng could feel that he had received some minor internal injuries from the kick, but a good few of his meridians were broken, making him to vomit blood.

Fortunately, he had already activated the immortal technique called

‘Covert kill technique’, which completely concealed his cultivation and thus dispelled her suspicion all of a sudden.

This ‘Covert kill technique’ was his trump card!

Considering the current level of his cultivation, he barely managed to use this technique and so it caused big damage to his meridians.

While ‘Covert kill technique’ was active, both his zhenqi and cultivation were completely concealed, making him no different from an ordinary person. How could an ordinary person possibly kill a martial artist like Wolf sword?

This immortal technique was widely used for assassination in the World of the Immortals, and in this situation, Ye Feng used it appropriately.

“Do you want to go back to the hospital?”

Su Menghan asked anxiously when she saw him vomiting blood. Shouldn’t he go to the hospital and get treatment?

“Go to the hospital? Do you have money?”

Ye Feng coughed up blood and held her to stand up.

“All spent.....”

Su Menghan hesitated, indeed, they didn't have money to admit Ye Feng in the hospital? But she suddenly changed her mind and quickly said: "I can tell my dad to admit you"

"Well, forget it, why take so much trouble, let's just rent a hotel room and rest tonight."

Ye Feng shook his head, looked up but saw a lot of people around, some of them were taking their pictures so he quickly wiped off the fresh blood from the corner of his mouth. After that, along with Su Menghan, he hastily got out of there.

This whole year, there was certainly no shortage of nonsensical news in the media.

Ye Feng imagined, in a while, the news channels would flash his photographs with a title like "The man caught two timing and kicked so hard that he spat blood near the hospital entrance".....

Fortunately, the pictures weren't very clear because they were taken hastily by mobile phones in the dim light of night.

Ye Feng was leaning casually onto Su Menghan while walking on the street, looking for a hotel. They used their identity cards to rent a hotel room. They had to use the last remaining money left with her.

After entering the room, Ye Feng immediately sat tightly on the sofa, pulled out a good few compounded drugs and swallowed them. Now he was ready to heal his injuries.

Today, he beheaded Wolf sword, offended Long Wan'er and the Dragon clan, he had been quite impulsive lately and must think carefully, there were a lot of loopholes, but in fact, from the very beginning, he had thought of the consequences of this series of events, and right now, he was thinking of ways to deal with them.

Su Menghan looked at Ye Feng and seemed quite worried about him. She not only prepared a wet towel for him, but also quickly boiled water for him in a pot. She appeared delighted while taking care of Ye Feng.

Poor girl, she herself did not know what kind of feelings she held for Ye Feng in her heart. Initially, she was undoubtedly disgusted of him, but after whenever she was facing danger, Ye Feng would always dutifully stand in front of her. Whenever she remembered those moments, her ignorant heart would start beating rapidly.

Mere the thought of how Ye Feng was kicked by that disheveled beauty near the hospital entrance would make her restless and feel uneasy.

There was no doubt that she was jealous, and this jealousy was not light.

Ye Feng and that beauty, in the end what happened between them which led to the buildup of so much resentment between the two? Could it be that this was the so called thoughtless sex first and abandonment later.....

Chapter 035 - School Beauty's Mind

Long wan'er returned all the way to the trade fair. Deep within her heart, she was extremely angry, and at the same time, ashamed of herself.

She was the leader of the young generation of Dragon Clan, how could she possibly go through such an experience? Unexpectedly tonight, that masked man had toyed with her quite a lot, this was really hateful!

She firmly believed in her inspection that Ye Feng was just an ordinary person, she could never be wrong about this.

Depending on this point, she had a solid reason to believe that the masked man and Ye Feng were absolutely two different people! Because, in this world of martial arts, it was not at all possible to conceal one's cultivation by using any kind of method.

“Judging by the nature of that old man, I guess he wouldn't dare to teach his grandson to practice martial arts.”

Long Wan'er thought to herself: “It seems like previous time, we accidentally meet once again..... Humph, that masked man, if I ever get to know about his identity, then he should consider himself as dead.”

She finally returned to the entrance of trade fair courtyard, took one step inside and immediately saw that handsome young man coming quickly to welcome her. But seeing her disheveled appearance, a

surprised look appeared on his face.

“Long Wan’er, did u chase after that guy?”

He hurriedly asked.

“Long Xian, when will you start using your brain?”

She snorted lightly and said: “Just look at my appearance, doesn’t it tell you whether I chased after that masked guy or not?”

“Well, that is also right.”

That handsome young man, Long Xian, scratched his head in a somewhat awkward manner and said: “I know that masked man’s name, he is called Mo Jiuge and he was one of the guests invited by Huang Lao.”

“Mo Jiuge?”

She frowned after hearing this strange name, was there really such a skilled swordsman present in the world of martial arts?

“Huang Lao said that Mo Jiuge is his friend from long ago, but he was kind of a loner since he was not in the contact of anyone for a very long time, so reputation is not significant.”

Long Xian quickly explained this to her.

“Huang Lao?”

Long Wan'er asked.

“He just now left the trade fair.”

Long Xian said in a somewhat helpless manner. Considering Huang Lao's cultivation, at present on the scene, no one should be able to stop him.

“Ok, got it.”

Long Wan'er lightly nodded her head: “Did you guys dispose off the corpse?”

The handsome young man happily smiled and said: “All these things have been buttoned up, I, Long Xian, can handle such type of matters quite well.”

“Humph.”

The Long Wan'er snorted then once confirming that there was no need for her to stay there, she turned around and walked away.

She really had suppressed plenty of anger today, and not just that, she

also kicked that Ye Feng, perhaps now his grandfather might come to inquire about it so she must do everything possible to deal with him, which was really bothersome.

She thought of when she heard ‘Ye Feng’ when the masked man was in the trade fair answering the phone call. Now she knew that Mo Jiuge and Ye Feng was not the same person, but there definitely was some connection between them. It might be possible that Ye Feng had given those three golden leaf grasses to Mo Jiuge.

In that phone call, she had faintly heard “People’s Hospital”, although she couldn’t succeed in pursuing the masked man to the hospital, but who would have thought that she would end up kicking Ye Feng, not only she failed to capture Mo Jiuge but she also kicked Ye Feng and hence caused a big trouble for herself.

Right now, she just wanted to find a place to take a good bath and change clothes to the ones she liked.

Just the thought of that masked man would turn her so mad that she wanted to smash things around her.

“Mo Jiuge, the next time we meet, you will be dead!”

She thought and a cold look flashed in her eyes.

.....

At midnight, Ye Feng finally recuperated his meridians completely and

restored them to the original state.

He lightly breathed out and opened his eyes.

The compounded drugs took a lot of time in restoring his zhenqi to its original form and repairing meridians completely, although he had used his connection with Heavenly Serpent Gang to obtain these herbs but their cost was not less.

That Scarred face man had been given the time of just two weeks to collect a variety of herbs, it took more than two million for him to collect them, however they had almost been used up by Ye Feng tonight.

Of course, compared with the cost of the herbs, the value of the compounded drugs was apparently much higher. If one could find sales channels, then there would certainly be a guarantee that these drugs would sell in millions!

Whenever there would be a shortage of money, he could look for a path to sell these compounded drugs to the people of the martial arts world, but before that, he must wait level up his cultivation and become capable enough to protect himself.

“It seems just like the World of the Immortals, there are only a handful of experts who walk outside and they rarely stir things up to cause problem. They are never caught in any kind of trouble. So long as one can achieve the cultivation of 10 years, it should be enough to guarantee one’s own security.”

Ye Feng deeply thought to himself, from today's experience in the trade fair, he could now make a conjecture about the current status of martial arts in this world.

In the World of the Immortals, if anyone wanted to quickly level up his cultivation then all he needed was to just eat some precious medicinal herbs and so on, but that was not realistic. Instead, the most effective way to rapidly grow one's cultivation in that world was to practice!

In the World of the Immortals, the practicing speed to level up the cultivation could also be increased. There were few big factions, they could even double the practicing speed, and on top of that, the effect would be remarkable. There were many old cultivation freaks in the World of the Immortals, who used to stay in the blessed spot and practice all year round without going out.

And now in this martial arts world as well, it seemed like the situation was most like the same. Huang Lao, from Zhejiang province, Mt. Tianzhu, wasn't he known as the so-called seventy-second pearl of China?

Ye Feng opened his eyes, moved slightly and then tried to wake up Su Menghan, who was actually sitting beside him on the sofa but had fallen asleep.

"You woke up, are you feeling any better?"

Su Menghan worriedly asked while rubbing her eyes.

“Relax, everything is all right.”

Ye Feng replied to her with a smile on his face as he was feeling a bit sorry seeing her so worried and concerned about him.

“Really?”

Su Menghan raised her head and her sleepiness vanished in an instant, she started rubbing and massaging his body all over in order to check his injuries but she realized that he wasn't feeling any pain. She finally felt relieved seeing him all better now.

Ye Feng looked at her actions and found it funny: “It seems like you're taking advantage of me...”

“What are you saying?”

Su Menghan's face suddenly turned red, hurriedly she pulled back her hands, but soon, something came in her mind and her complexion changed. She asked directly: “You haven't explained yet, just who in the world was that beautiful woman?”

“Don't ask about this, sometimes not knowing is better.”

Ye Feng shook his head and said.

He was well intentioned, involving Su Menghan in the world of martial arts, in spite of knowing that she was leading a modern life in this

modern world, was not at all a good idea. However, unfortunately, Su Menghan didn't thinking so because she thought that Ye Feng and Long Wan'er had a secret.

“Really?”

Su Menghan was somewhat disappointed with his reply, she stood up and said: “Then consider this as finished, I want to sleep now, you rent another room.”

There was no doubt that she was in a hurry.

“It's just, I thought about so many things, but I never expected that it was all a self deception, alas.....”

Originally she thought that if ye Feng came up with a reasonable explanation then she would be willing to accept him. But now, by no means she could accept him when he was together with that beautiful woman.

In order to prevent any kind of accident, she didn't want to be together with Ye Feng in the night. Hence, she needed a separate room.

“Well, then remember to get up early tomorrow, since we have to go back to Yanjing.”

Ye Feng was somewhat disappointed, he got up and walked away. He had a feeling that now she hated him.

“Ok.”

Su Menghan nodded as she saw him going out of the room. She was feeling very uncomfortable since lots of complicated thoughts were running in her mind.

With a great difficulty, she had made a favorable impression of Ye Feng in her heart with a great difficulty, but now, wasn't it like the school beauty's sweet and pure first love ended right after beginning?

Ye Feng was not at all aware about this school beauty's thoughts, otherwise if he knew that she liked him then he would definitely explain things to her. Sadly, things went wrong between the two, not to mention Ye Feng was also very much fond of this good-hearted girl.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had never dealt with any girl, so at this time, he naturally couldn't correctly guess what was going on in Su Menghan's mind, instead he made an assumption that she disliked him.

He went out of the room and just wanted to go to the front desk to rent a room to rest for the night. But when he looked up, he actually that the door to the opposite room was open and there was bright light shining inside. An old man was sitting on the sofa, sitting in repose with eyes closed.

“Huang Lao? Not good.....”

Ye Feng was immediately startled.

Chapter 036 - Ye Clan In The Past

When Ye Feng looked up and saw the old man, Huang Lao, at the same time, Huang Lao also raised his head to look at him, their eyes suddenly met.

“What should I call you, Ye Feng or Mo Jiuge?”

Huang Lao indifferently asked this, he then shifted his gaze and relentlessly fired his stare at Ye Feng.

“Old man, probably, I haven’t seen you before, right?”

Ye Feng smiled while saying so, he tried his best to pull a superficial act just to prove that he really hadn’t seen him before.

“Is that so?”

Huang Lao snorted loudly: “I am Ou’s friend from Mt Tianzhu Huang Province. You can fool others but you cannot hide the truth from me, are you really Mo Jiuge?”

“Sorry, Mo Jiuge is just a friend of mine whom I meet occasionally. But are you looking for him?”

Ye Feng was standing in the doorway in a state of alert as he had a feeling that the opposite party could launch an attack any moment.

Huang Lao had 30 years of cultivation so obviously Ye Feng was far from being his match. However he had a curiosity to know the goal which brought this old man here.

Huang Lao carefully looked at Ye Feng's face, it didn't seem like he was lying which startled him, he hesitated: "You're not?"

"No, I am not."

Ye Feng shook his head.

"Well, even I told that old codger, how you can possibly practice....."

Huang Lao sighed and said: "Do you know where I can find Mo Jiuge?"

"How would I know? He has always been very elusive, who appears and disappears unpredictably. It's always he who finds me, not the other way round."

Ye Feng shrugged his shoulders, but at the same time, a doubt took birth in his heart regarding that old codger, mentioned by the other party, could it be that this old codger was his grandfather? So it appeared like there were some people in the world of martial arts who knew about him and what kind of status he held?

At least, they knew that he was not some ordinary person.

"Well, if he comes looking for you, then you convey my message to

him.”

Huang Lao stood up and said in a low voice: “Killing that greedy Wolf Sword is not a big deal. But if you want to be a part of Jianghu, just come to Mt Tianzhu and look for me, otherwise the Dragon Clan will never give up. Goodbye!”

Finally, after finishing his talk, Huang Lao’s stature moved like the wind, it didn’t feel like he was over 60 years. In a flash, he arrived at the doorway, brushed with Ye Feng, passed through and suddenly disappeared from that place.

But suddenly, Huang Lao extended his hand in order to grab Ye Feng’s arm!

However, Ye Feng didn’t hesitate to use the “Covert kill technique”!

Covert kill technique was not the type of immortal technique which could only be used for assassinations, it was also used to camouflage oneself as an ordinary person. It was like hiding in the crowd and waiting for the right opportunity to act. At this moment, all of the energy flowing in the meridians within his body suddenly stopped, his Dantian was instantly polluted as well, thereby successfully camouflaging him as an ordinary human being.

“So you really.....”

Huang Lao finally believed that Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were not the same people.

Merely a single strike of the sword was capable enough to kill that Wolf Sword, how could an ordinary man possibly achieve that?

After confirming this, Huang Lao took sudden footsteps, his whole body seemed to be floating and went far away, and in an instant, he completely disappeared from the corridor.

“Fuck!”

Ye Feng cursed out loudly, he reluctantly displayed his ‘Covert kill technique’ but since used at such a low cultivation level, his meridians were unable to withstand the load and were severely damaged. If Ye Feng would keep on using this technique again and again, then very soon, this would negatively affect his body.

But he knew that if he hadn’t displayed covert kill technique at this time, then he would be facing a bigger trouble right now.....

“I am only waiting to achieve 5 years of cultivation, then I can very easily display techniques like Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and Hidden Kill Technique. But how should I promote my cultivation rapidly?”

Ye Feng clenched his teeth while thinking so. Earlier, he obtained golden leaf grasses and the half piece of spirit stone, but only by coincidence. In the World of the Immortals as well, he never had so much luck.

In order to promote the cultivation quickly, orderly and routinely

practice was a very slow method. Besides, he must wait till the university graduation to achieve five years of cultivation, but that was a very long period of time, so obviously he might not wait that longer.

“As soon as I go back, I will ask Ou B about the place from where he obtained that half spirit stone. He can tell me about that place, certainly it would be somewhere in the immortal paradise. If I find out the hidden source of spirit stones then I should be able to progress twice with half the effort..... ”

Ye Feng felt relieved and also deactivated the covert kill technique.

Just when he thought of going to the front desk to rent a room, suddenly a gust of wind blew in the corridor!

This gust of wind was faster than Huang Lao. Ye Feng didn't even get enough time to respond and suddenly a vigorous and powerful hand gripped his arm.

This feeling, resembled a bit like.....

Ye Feng cursed loudly and thought that the old man had come once again to visit him.

If this sneak attack was not done by his grandfather then who else could it be?

He failed to activate Covert Kill Technique at the crucial time, poor boy, moreover his one and half a year of cultivation had already been exposed

to the other party.

“Little brat! Who taught you this technique?”

A serious and old voice transmitted into the ears of Ye Feng and it was followed by a solid force which suddenly pushed him inside the room.

Ye Feng swayed like a carp back and forth to set out, he turned back to look and actually saw an old man wearing a gray outfit, standing on the doorway as if blocking it, had straight eyebrows slanting upwards, sharp eyes like an eagle, very swift and fiery vision, tall and straight stature. The way he was standing there, people might think that he was like a ten thousand years old motionless palatial!

This time, he finally saw the true colors of his grandfather.

“You, yourself, will destroy your Dantian, otherwise I, Ye Wentian, will personally act!”

Ye Wentian was Ye Feng’s grandfather, the way he was speaking was very awe-inspiring and was constantly staring at Ye Feng.

“I don’t understand, I am your grandson, then why?”

Ye Feng acted very coldly and asked in a puzzled manner.

Himself destroy his Dantian? He absolutely did not want to do that, because deep within in his heart, he had always thought of one day

returning to the World of the Immortals. He couldn't put down the memories of the time when he had been constantly together with his beautiful female master for more than ten years

“Do you really want to know? Good, then I will tell you.”

Ye Wentian snorted loudly then he paced into the room and conveniently locked the door.

“In the past, Ye clan used to be a big aristocratic clan in the world of martial arts, but unfortunately, a night of destruction arrived which destroyed everything. I, Ye Wentian, have managed to preserve the Ye clan till now by signing off a deal with the other party that if you don't practice martial arts, they will not come after you.....”

Hearing this suddenly gave a powerful shock to Ye Feng's mind.

So this world's Ye Feng actually belonged to a clan, which, in the past, was actually considered a big aristocratic clan in the world of martial arts?

As for the reason behind the destruction of clan, he asked his grandfather but didn't get a reply, but Ye Feng could make a guess. Now he finally understood why Huang Lao said those words and why his grandfather asked him to destroy his Dantian.

Once he started his practice, then that would definitely attract the attention of those hostile forces. Preventing him from practicing was just for his own safety purpose.

“Do you think I, Ye Wentian, is some coward who has given up on his revenge?”

Ye Wentian snorted and said: “Jianghu’s man has an unpredictable heart, they are playing games from all sides and their situation is complicated, there’s no need for you to know. As long as know, I am here for you, so

“Wait a sec.”

Ye Feng raised his hand and said: “I have a way to hide my own cultivation so I don’t need to destroy my Dantian, right?”

“Well, I saw when Huang Lao was inspecting you.”

Ye Wentian disdainfully said: “He didn’t find out that you little bastard was using a technique. However, I clearly saw through your little trick. For being prepared against contingencies, I have no other choice but to cripple you.”

“Go cripple your sister.”

Ye Feng said without hesitation: “If you force me, I will commit suicide! Don’t you want to kindle our clan? If I want to die, you cannot always come to stop me can you?”

“You!”

Ye Wentian stared at him angrily: “Little bastard, your courage is growing bigger and bigger!”

“Thank you very much.”

Ye Feng did not flinch while both were mutually staring into each other’s eyes.

Chapter 037 - Crafty Old Man

Finally, Ye Feng displayed the 'Covert Kill Technique' in front of his grandfather so that he could inspect him properly.

Even his grandfather, Ye Wentian, couldn't feel anything even though Ye Feng was a martial cultivator! Moreover, he just felt that the strength present in Ye Feng's body didn't seem to be the same as inner zhenqi.....

“Who taught you?”

Ye Wentian inquired.

“An expert living in seclusion.”

This reminded him of his beautiful female master from the World of the Immortals, suddenly his expression changed since he turned a bit sad: “Grandfather, even your cultivation is inferior to her.”

“Is that so?”

Ye Wentian frowned a little because he didn't believe in what Ye Feng just said. Although he was not considered at the top of martial arts world but he was still a first-class master.

Was it possible that there was an expert living in seclusion that possessed higher skill and cultivation than his?

However, Ye Wentian did not ask too much, just helplessly said: “Well, since you have already embarked on this road and have found a way to hide your cultivation, this old codger won’t interfere anymore... However, you little brat, you have to be careful and never let other people catch you. Especially the Dragon Clan, understood?”

Dragon Clan?

Ye Feng did not ask anything, just nodded: “Yes, I know.”

“Right, just memorize this number, it belongs to an old friend of mine, later if you have anything to ask then you can ask him for help.”

After saying that, Ye Wentian took out his cell phone to find a contact number to hand it over to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng saw this and was a bit startled, what the hell, this old codger had a mobile phone?

“What happened, why do you look so surprised? Little brat, quickly record this number in your phone, this old man’s time is very precious.”

Ye Wentian gave a light tap on the back of Ye Feng’s head and said in a serious tone.

Ye Feng helplessly looked at the number and noticed that the contact name was called “Lin Hongchuan”. His heart suddenly moved and he

directly opened his mouth to ask: “Grandpa, isn’t this Lin Hongchuan from the Yanjing city’s first clan, the Lin Clan?”

“Yes, he is.”

Ye Wentian nodded: “We have reached an agreement, when you get admitted to the Yanjing University then we will betroth his granddaughter to you.”

“Wait, wait, wait.”

Ye Feng waved his hands hastily, he felt very uncomfortable in his heart. Any modern young person of this world would react the same way if they were suddenly faced with the idea of arrange marriage, they would obviously not feel well about it.

“I’m a talented guy, do you think that I would just give in to this?”

Ye Feng thought that who knew whether this Lin Hongchuan’s granddaughter was good looking or ugly? Whether she was fat or slim, tall or short, and has a good temper or bad temper.....?

However, based on what Ou B said, it could be interpreted that generally, the females of Lin Clan were considered as great beauties, but Ye Feng couldn’t be sure until he would see her and get to know her. It was not like whatever said by the people was always going to be true.

“I don’t accept it.”

Ye Feng deeply thought of it and said firmly.

“Little brat, it’s not choice whether to accept it or not, you must accept it.”

Ye Wentian scolded him first then said with a smile: “Or is it true that you really love that little girl living next to your villa? I tell you, just wait till you see the granddaughter of Mr. Lin, you will stop caring about other women. You will simply forget that other women even exist in world.”

“Why are you so exaggerating her? What’s her name?”

Ye Feng didn’t give any explanation about Su Menghan’s matter, rather out of curiosity, asked her name from his grandfather.

“Lin Shiqing, she is a well known persona in the Yanjing University.”

Ye Wentian patted on Ye Feng’s shoulder and said: “Do not hesitate because this kind of romantic luck is something others cannot enjoy even if they want to. Also, do not carelessly get involved in the matters of martial arts world, it’s not good for your own safety. I will send someone to monitor you

“Wait a minute.”

Ye Feng’s complexion suddenly changed: “How about we make an agreement?”

He couldn't afford to be monitored frequently, that much supervision was going to hurt his freedom? In order to attain freedom, a little sacrifice of other aspect was necessary in this situation. At least it wouldn't hurt him anyway.

“What agreement?”

Ye Wentian frowned and asked.

“I promise you, I will gladly accept that girl, Lin Shiqing, and I will also pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University.”

Ye Feng said slowly, “But, you can't send someone to monitor me. You don't need to interfere in my matters, what do you say? If you don't agree then I would rather die than surrendering to your selfish commands!”

“Well, brat, you have certainly gained courage.”

Ye Wentian put on a crafty smile and said: “Well, since there are only two persons remaining in the Ye Clan, you and me, so this old codger may be unable to send out someone to spy on you, ha ha.”

Ye Feng listened to him and secretly cursed in his heart. Fuck! His grandfather was playing with him!

This old codger was radically like a polished rod commander. How could sending over someone to monitor him be a tough job for a man of

his status?

“Well it’s settled now, you will never regret it. Well, old codger should go now.”

Ye Wentian said deceitfully then smirked and finally disappeared in front of Ye Feng’s eyes. His floating body opened the door, and like a gust of wind, he suddenly disappeared.

Ye Feng criticized that old codger deep in his heart, so this crafty old fox was really playing with him.

What should be done, could it be that it was really very important to accept that Lin Shiqing?

“Well, it’s not necessary to deeply consider this matter. Even if I am willing to accept her, probably she is not ready to accept me?”

As he was thinking so, he stood up in front of the wardrobe and sized himself up.

Well in one look, he didn’t seem like a tall, rich and attractive guy.

Since Lin Clan was the first Clan of Yanjing city, therefore certainly, Lin Shiqing would have high hopes and keen eyesight, would she develop a liking for someone like him?

Ye Feng didn’t think too much about this matter, in fact he also

didn't go to the front desk to rent a new room. Instead, he decided to use the same room, where he was conversing with his grandpa moments ago, for the night which would also save him some money.

He comfortably took bath then lied down on the bed, and after a while, he fell asleep.

But, without spiritual sense, his sleep was not steady and safe.

If he had 10 years of cultivation, then just by congealing his spiritual sense, even if he was in a deep sleeping state, he could clearly feel the slightest trouble in his surroundings. This method, which simply went against the heavens, could only be used by cultivation immortals.

Even the great martial arts practitioners of this world like Huang Lao could not use this technique. Or else, Huang Lao did not need to seize the arm of Ye Feng just to inspect his cultivation. A person, who was able to use spiritual sense, could directly check one's cultivation from afar without ever coming into contact, which was extremely convenient.

.....

Next morning, Ye Feng and Su Menghan got out of their beds respectively, and after some time, they walked out of the hotel to take a taxi to go to the train station.

“I'll later pay you the amount of 200,000.”

In the taxi, Su Menghan bit her lip and said lightly.

“Forget it.”

Ye Feng, who was sitting beside her, shook his head.

Now, he knew about this little girl’s family situation, even if he would wait for her to return the 200,000, he didn’t know how much time it would take, so he might as well just forget about it.

Anyway, now he had the support of Heavenly Serpent Gang, obtaining a mere two hundred thousand was not really a big deal for him.

“No, I do not want to owe you.”

Su Menghan looked out the window, her long eyelashes were trembling while there was very peaceful look on her face.

“Then do as you like.”

Ye Feng did not say much, he did not bother to disincline her decisions.

“You.....”

Su Menghan turned her head and stared at Ye Feng, she wanted to say something but somewhat hesitated.

“What’s wrong?”

Ye Feng looked at her strangely.

Su Menghan wanted to ask something, but the words stopped at the tip of her tongue and couldn't speak. Her heart was struggling constantly, reminding her that she didn't want to be with Ye Feng after she witnessed the tragedy caused by the beautiful woman at the hospital entrance with her own eyes.....

“Well, it's nothing.”

Su Menghan shook her head and determined her heart to no longer have any relation with Ye Feng.

Of course, Ye Feng could not read minds and did not know what was going on in her heart.

He made a random guess and said: “Are you still thinking about your cousin? Do not worry, I'll go back and certainly investigate thorough about the source of drugs, then give you a proper explanation.”

“No I am not, you fool.”

Su Menghan cursed loudly in her heart but did not speak out loud.

After having gone through so many things, she was very confused and did not know how to deal with her relationship with Ye Feng. She was quietly looking out of the window, pretending to look very calm and

tranquil, but her plump chest was rising and falling rapidly, showing that her heart was not at all tranquil.

Since yesterday's incident, her spirit was not very good, she was basically very tired. Later on the train, she slowly fell asleep with her head rested against Ye Feng's.....

Chapter 038 - Youth In Western-Style Suit

The high-speed rail went fast and it would take only 20 minutes to reach Yanjing city.

In the train compartment, Ye Feng and Su Menghan were sitting adjacent to each other, but at this time, Su Menghan, who was leaning against Ye Feng, was asleep and appeared to be too tired because of yesterday's fatigue. Needless to say, at this time, Ye Feng was in a pleasant mood, after all his school's Xiaohua was sitting so close to him and it was quite pleasant when the intermittent bursts of her fragrance was greeting his nostrils

(Lastvoice: Xiaohua is the Chinese term for 'school beauty')

“Ah, you beast!”

Suddenly, Su Menghan woke up with a painful look on her face.

“What happened?”

Ye Feng lowered his head and looked at the somewhat wet eyes of this pretty Xiaohua. There was a very sad look on her face and appeared somewhat bewildered as well. Damn, could it be that this girl didn't realize that she was sleepy and fell asleep leaning against him? Was this the reason why she called him a beast?

In this high-speed train's compartment, a lot of people aimed their line

of sights towards them, pointing towards Ye Feng, without a doubt, others had seen his arm around an attractive beautiful woman, but when this beauty shouted “beast”, all of a sudden, he was seriously regarded as a beast by everyone. Some elderly started to sigh and talking about current society’s moral degeneration, while some also began to compare the new generation with the young people in the old days.

“I’m sorry.....”

Su Menghan woke up and hastily separated from Ye Feng, the bright red blush on her face made her look even more attractive.

She then suddenly remembered that she was with Ye Feng on a high-speed train and going back to Yanjing city.

But that dream just now.....

Su Menghan’s heart was in a somewhat trance-like state, she was basically absent-minded and still could properly differentiate the reality from her dream, making her heart to beat rapidly even now.

Her eyes secretly looked at Ye Feng and she continued to stare at him, while there was confused look on her face.

She quickly tilted her head to one side and looked out of the window, reorganizing her disorderly skirt and hair in a somewhat chaotic manner but didn’t speak anything. That dream just now was really too embarrassing, she did not want anyone to find out about it.

In the dream, she actually made a romantic confession to Ye Feng then began to live happily together with him, but at this time, that beautiful woman in untidy appearance from last evening suddenly appeared out of nowhere! And, after having a one night stand with her, Ye Feng abandoned her and went to stay with that beautiful woman. She had a severe heartbreak and could not help but shout out, “beast”.....

“Beautiful lady, what happened?”

Just then, all of a sudden, a voice filled with righteous indignation transmitted from Ye Feng’s side.

Both of them looked up and saw a young man wearing a western-style suit and tie. He had a 23 or 24 year old appearance, high nose, looked handsome and was standing beside Ye Feng and staring angrily at him.

In the high-speed train compartment, a lot of people immediately applauded for him.

At this time, he dared to stand up for justice and undoubtedly was a real man among men. Apparently, everyone present in the surroundings assumed Ye Feng as an indecent beast who tried to harass a beautiful girl while this youth in western-style suit was actually a good and brave citizen who was behaving righteously.

However, other people could not see the kind of look apparent in the eyes of this youth. He was actually secretly looking at Su Menghan’s breasts, and was obviously very much attracted to Su Menghan’s beauty and coveted her. He seemed quite anxious to replace Ye Feng and sit next to this beauty, and seemed to be literally drooling over her.

“.....”

Su Menghan looked up and actually noticed the look in the eyes of this youth. She frowned and a feeling of disgust appeared in her heart, she immediately crossed both her hands on her chest, thereby blocking the line of sight of the opposite party.

“Get lost.”

Ye Feng was too lazy to deal with this nonsense, he directly stood up and blocked the line of sight of that youth, so now, he could no longer peep at Su Menghan with his dirty vision. This guy actually dared to peep at his woman and that too right in front of him? How could Ye Feng allow this!

When the youth in western-style suit saw Ye Feng standing up and was almost as tall as him, he simply refused to be outdone, and said in a cold voice: “Young man, you shouldn’t interfere when two people are talking, hasn’t your family taught you about this?”

At the same time, he raised his right hand and properly rearranged the tie near his chest in a refined but arrogant way.

While he was putting the tie in order, he was constantly thinking how he should scold this boy and put him to shame, so ashamed that it would end up difficult to bear. But Ye Feng definitely wasn’t in a mood to talk so much nonsense with him!

Ye Feng had suddenly gotten very angry!

The opposite party actually brought his family into this, and Ye Feng would get very touchy whenever his family, especially his mother, was mentioned, because he had never seen his mother! Ye Feng blew a fuse, and being a hot headed guy, he couldn't control his anger and immediately threw a punch which pounded on the chest of that youth. In an instant, he was sent flying several feet away and heaving fell in the corridor.

Ye Feng did not use his full strength. Otherwise his real fist could simply explode the body of that youth.

“Boy, you dared to hit me My uncle works for Heavenly Serpent Gang.....”

The youth in western-style suit clutched his chest and barely managed to stand up, then said while pointing his trembling finger at Ye Feng.

“Heavenly Serpent Gang? Well, isn't that good.”

Ye Feng sneered and completely ignored the opposite party. He went back and sat down beside Su Menghan.

As soon as the people in the surrounding heard the name of Heavenly Serpent Gang, there were somewhat surprised, so are in abundance flamboyant, did the organized crime come out? They looked at Ye Feng and thought that this young fellow would soon face tragedy.

When Su Menghan heard the name of Heavenly Serpent Gang, she couldn't help but laughed a bit, because she was the only one who knew that Heavenly Serpent Gang simply couldn't pose any threat to Ye Feng. She couldn't believe that they were bumping into the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang just anywhere.

But when she saw how Ye Feng didn't even bother to explain things, he directly hit the opposite party and sent him flying, she was a little dissatisfied: "You are too violent, well, cannot you use speech to settle things out?"

"With such a person, what's there to say?"

Ye Feng disagreed with her, anyways, when his powerful fist was like the truth and could easily solve the matter then he was certainly not willing to waste time in talking nonsense with unimportant people.

"You're really..... humph."

Su Menghan said but it didn't have any effect on him, so she angrily turned away.

"What's going on here?"

Soon, two train marshals walked into the train compartment and when they saw the painful look on the face of that youth, one of them stepped forward and asked in a loud voice.

While clutching his own chest, the suited youth barely managed to

point his finger at Ye Feng: “Just now, that boy sexually harassed a female passenger, when I went forward to stop him, he hit me

The two uniformed train marshals looked at Ye Feng, discussed a bit then made a nearby female train attendant to support the suited youth and help him in leaving the compartment.

But both train marshals, one tall and one short, walked over toward Ye Feng.

“Did you hit that man?”

The chunky train marshal arrived right in front of Ye Feng and asked while staring at him. He looked at Su Menghan sitting nearby and could not resist from having a feeling of shock and amaze, he once looked at her and this time, his eyes were as if glued to her.

“Yes it’s him, we saw.”

An aunt stood up and immediately gave her statement. She really could not stand watching today’s young people going too far.

“He hit the other guy, and before that, he even harassed the beautiful girl sitting beside him, we all heard her cry ‘beast’!”

At the same time, an uncle who was incomparably envious of Ye Feng stood up and said, while his words were filled with righteous indignation and fervent.

The chunky train marshal heard this and immediately believed in it, he turned to Ye Feng and said: “Come with me, the train is soon going to stop at Yanjing city station, I must ask you to get off with me at the station.”

After getting off the train, he would surely inform the police station and make them come to take him.

Ye Feng thought to make a phone call to that Lin Hongchuan after reaching the police station. He basically wanted to witness how much influence this Lin clan actually held. Therefore, he stood up and was all ready to leave the compartment with the chunky train marshal.

“Wait!”

Su Menghan abruptly stood up and held Ye Feng, then clenched her teeth and said: “You didn’t even ask me, the other party, involved in this, how you can just casually take him away like this?”

At this time, she was certainly standing on Ye Feng’s side. It was needless to say that the man in suit simply induced disgust in her heart, and this whole thing actually started when she shouted “beast” out loud, so if Ye Feng was taken away like this then she would feel restless at heart.

Chapter 039 - Elder Brother Ye And Ms. Ye

Seeing that Su Menghan stood up in favor of Ye Feng startled everyone around there.

“Young lady, may I ask you something, is this a fact that he hit someone?”

It appeared like the chunky train marshal had noticed something, therefore he tried to shift the whole matter towards hitting a person.

He could now figure out easily that the relationship between this young boy and girl standing in front of him was not general, they were most likely to be a couple. In that case, the so-called harassment charges certainly didn't hold up, but hitting a person on the train could be considered as quite a nasty behavior.

“He hit that other guy in order to protect me, right?”

Su Menghan pulled Ye Feng's arm and clung on to him very intimately and said while opening her big beautiful eyes wide open: “His temperament was a little bad, and more importantly, that was at fault in the first place.”

Ye Feng listened to her words which somewhat took him by surprise, he never thought that Su Menghan actually had the courage to stand up and speak for him.

“This.....”

The chunky train marshal somewhat hesitated seeing her taking Ye Feng's side, now at this situation, he didn't know what should be done.

“Then it's all right.”

The tall train marshal tugged him aside and with a smile on his face, said: “Sit down, you can leave the station only after a proper settlement.”

Then, the tall train marshal pulled his companion to leave this compartment.

“Hey, this is against the rules, what are you doing?”

This really baffled the chunky train marshal.

“Well, this matter is related to Heavenly Serpent Gang, so we can't interfere into this matter foolishly.”

The tall train marshal said in a whispering tone, the way he was speaking truly revealed that he was obviously afraid of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Both of the train marshals left, and suddenly, a silence spread out all over the compartment. Many people were feeling speechless since they were thinking that it was just a little couple argument, but that youth in western-style suit selfishly interfered and got beaten up, this whole

incident was purely hilarious for them.

However, this pair of young lovers must be very scared right now and wouldn't be feeling any better since the opposite party had the full support of Heavenly Serpent Gang.....

“Why did you help me?”

Ye Feng sat on his seat and asked this question from Su Menghan.

“This was entirely my fault, so shouldn't I help you speak with them?”

Su Menghan replied to him and then she leaned against the window.

“Right.”

Ye Feng smiled and nodded his head, he thought that didn't this whole thing happen only because of the single word “beast” which came out of the mouth of this little girl which stirred things up?

Fortunately, this matter was also not a big trouble for him. If he was an ordinary man, then whether it was to swallow an insult or brutally fight with people, ultimately, just by knowing the fact that Heavenly Serpent Gang would be aiming at him wouldn't end up in a good result for him.

This was the benefit of having strength. In case of lack of strength, just being together with such a beautiful girl, Su Menghan, would attract a countless number of troubles for him.

In order to avoid more troubles, Ye Feng took out his phone and sent a message to the Scarred face man, directing him to come to the train station and defend him.

“Also, listen.”

Su Menghan raised her beautiful black-colored eyebrows and continued saying to Ye Feng: “You must keep your temperament in check later on, , even though you are backed up by Heavenly Serpent Gang but frequently beating up people like this will one day certainly cause a big trouble for you

Ye Feng stared at her face, as always, she looked very pure and beautiful when accompanied with just a touch of concern on her face.

“Got it.”

Ye Feng turned his head and nodded.

Originally, he was definitely not used to seeing such type of things. In the World of the Immortals, there was a law of the jungle which stated that one should not interfere in the fights of others, because the fight might lead to losing one’s life. When he used to have a weak cultivation of just 10 years, following his beautiful female master was the safer option for him to survive in that world.

However now, he felt some strange feelings in his heart. In the World of the Immortals, there was a beautiful woman who used to always stand

in front of him to protect him from dangers, she was his master. But at this time, his beautiful master was no longer by his side.

“I remember he was not like this earlier, could it be that he received stimulation that evening which ended up turning him into his current self.....”

Su Menghan thought to herself that the sudden change in Ye Feng’s attitude took place right after her dad offered him 200,000 to humiliate him, she felt a bit sorry in her heart.

There was no denying of the fact that Su Menghan had now imprinted a very good impression of Ye Feng in her heart, or it could be said that she was in love with him. But something was still intriguing her, it was that if last night, at the entrance of the hospital, that Long Wan’er girl hadn’t shown up suddenly, then perhaps, she might have really confessed her feeling to Ye Feng by now.

.....

The train stopped at Yanjing Train station, both of them got out of the train together and left the station.

Taking a broad view at the stretch of tall buildings, Ye Feng felt a bit relieved, finally, he was back to his own city. Here, as long as he did not expose his identity of being a martial arts practitioner, he would not get into any trouble caused by the martial arts community.

“Uncle, they have come out.”

Just after getting out of the station, Ye Feng immediately heard a familiar voice. He tilted his head and looked to the side and saw the same young man in the western-style suit from the train, was standing there along with another group of men in the same western-style suit and sunglasses. From very far, he was pointing to him and Su Menghan.

They all should be from Heavenly Serpent Gang, but the scarred face man wasn't there.

Soon, a group of people walked toward them with an aggressive look on their faces. They all looked like they truly belonged to a dark organized crime world, were clearing the path by dispersing the surrounding passer-by in abundance, and nobody really dared to approach even half a step close to them.

Only Ye Feng and Su Menghan were still standing together waiting for the other party to come close to them.

“Is this the guy who hit my nephew on the train?”

This group was headed by a square faced man who was looking coldly at Ye Feng. He was the uncle of that young man in the western-style suit, besides he was also a small gang leader of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“He was being rude to my girlfriend, also cursed my family, did I do anything wrong if I hit him?”

Ye Feng fiercely looked at the young man in western-style suit and said

lightly.

“Young boy, you are in this situation and you still dare to be arrogant?”

When the youth in western-style suit saw Ye Feng's bold attitude, it instantaneously ignited his anger. He wanted to take away them, cripple the guy then take his woman and have fun with her, but now, he decided to teach this guy a lesson right there on the train station and make him know the fate of those who dared to annoy Heavenly Serpent Gang!

“I am just stating the truth.”

Ye Feng shook his head then looked up and saw that from a very far place, the scarred face man was actually anxiously rushing toward them, and seemed to have just now hung up his phone. Therefore, now Ye Feng knew fairly well that he didn't need to begin anymore.

While the young man in western-style suit along with his square faced uncle were still staring at Ye Feng constantly, so they didn't notice the Scarred Face man coming toward them. Seeing Ye Feng's calm appearance really made them furious, triggering their anger to grow bigger and bigger. They mused that this punk just had a short period of time left to feel all better, after that they would teach him a good lesson.

Square faced man waved his hand to instruct his men in suits and sunglasses to gear up and be ready to attack any moment. For them, dealing with a high school student was not a big deal so they were kind of feeling relaxed. They just needed one second to put down the opposite party and end this fight instantly.

But at this time, a familiar voice came from behind them: “Stop! What are you punks trying to do!?”

A group of people turned their heads to see the source of that voice and they saw their boss standing behind them, there was a scowl and anger present on his whole face.

“Brother, this guy hit my nephew on the train with no reason at all, so we are just here to discuss with him about how to solve this issue.”

The square faced man noticed his boss’s bad mood and did not speak the entire truth.

“Well, do you think I don’t know what kind of guy your nephew really is?”

The Scarred faced man lightly snorted and then stared at that youth in western-style suit.

“ThisBrother

The youth in western-style suit was somewhat cautious, he was constantly looking at the mobile phone held by the Scarred face man and was actually aware that something was not right here, about which he didn’t know anything completely.

“Well, this young boy is my younger cousin, later on when you see him, must call him Elder brother Ye and her as Ms. Ye, understood?”

The Scarred face man said this in a very serious tone and then he affectionately patted on the shoulders of Ye Feng, stupefying all of the members of the gang instantly.

Elder brother Ye and Ms. Ye?

The faces of both the youth in western-style suit and the square faced turned green all of a sudden. Fuck, so this boy actually had such a status? So he was intentionally playing the role of the pig to eat the tiger in the end!

Su Menghan, who was originally standing quietly beside Ye Feng, at this time listened to 'Ms. Ye' and immediately blushed, her face suddenly turned red from her cheeks to the bottom of the neck. She thought that this man was really too much, he didn't know what to talk and actually spoke so irresponsibly. However, most importantly, was really Ye Feng the cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang? No wonder, her father made her to approach Ye Feng.

Chapter 040 - Mysterious Organization And Cai Shao

After knowing the identity of Ye Feng, the youth wasn't feeling quite convinced, while on the contrary, the Square faced man knew how to deal with this type of situation on the basis of his rich social experience, he immediately said: "Elder Brother Ye, Ms. Ye, just now we have offended you numerous times, for this mistake kindly forgive my little nephew. He doesn't understand the custom, he has put you guys into a trouble, once we go back, I will strictly discipline him."

"It's fine, you can leave."

Ye Feng waved his hand since he did not want to say anymore. Whether he would discipline him or would make him suffer from extreme distress, it was quite natural that it had nothing to do with Ye Feng, so he would certainly not care about it.

Rather he was actually concerned about other thing.

When he saw that the square faced man, along with all his men, had left the place, he immediately asked from the Scarred face man: "Now, let's talk about the drugs matter."

The Scarred face man's shiny bald head was reflecting the midday sun quite well, making him appear especially bold.

He listened to what Ye Feng said, although he wanted to say something

but he was a bit embarrassed, he glanced at Su Menghan. He was afraid that Su Menghan was not suitable for listening to this kind of thing, that was why he somewhat hesitated.

Su Menghan saw through it and in a very considerate way she said: “I’m going to buy a pack of napkins, you guys carry on.”

She then turned around to leave, her beautiful slender figure became a sharp scenery outside the station which attracted the eyes of the people. However, they previously saw her with the Scarred face man and even before that with those suited men who appeared to like the personnel of some organized criminal group, so no one dared to harass her or even tried to come to her to strike up a conversation.

Obviously, the deterrent force of the Scarred face man was very formidable among the group of people.

When Su Menghan left for a while, the Scarred face man said in a dignified manner: “Elder Brother Ye, an year ago, our Heavenly Serpent Gang, along with the other three Gangs of Yanjing city, were only engaged in relatively mild general drugs business, after all this is the capital city, so no one can preserve too many words.....”

“Then?”

Ye Feng nodded his head and hinted him to continue what he was saying. Hearing to what the Scarred face man said just now, a doubt had taken birth in his mind which was puzzling him, that one year ago there were four gangs in Yanjing city?

“One year ago, a mysterious organization came into power in Yanjing.”

The Scarred face man stopped speaking for a moment then in a very serious tone, he continued: “At once, the bosses of the four gangs were assembled secretly and they made us help them in the experimentation on a new drug in secret. Of course, we were not happy with this, and at that time, the boss of the largest of the four gangs, Southern Heavenly Gates, lifted the table on the spot and killed the two men who were sent by the opposite party.”

Then, the Scarred face man continued saying with a hint of fear in his eyes: “However, the next day, we found out that the entire Southern Heavenly Gates had been eradicated unexpectedly! After the eradication of the entire clan of Southern Heavenly Gates, each of us three bosses of other three gangs received a warning letter, saying that if we do not experiment on the new drugs, then our fate would be the same as the fate of Southern Heavenly Gates.....

“Almost one year has passed but you still have no idea who this opposite party really is?”

Ye Feng frowned and asked.

“Only occasionally, I hear from the people transporting drugs, that the boss of the opposite party is seemed to be called ‘Cai Shao’, everything else about him is still under dark, but Yanjing city does not have any influential family with the surname ‘Cai’, therefore, I really do not know who he really is.”

Scar shook his head: “At the beginning of each month, we are assigned

a specified location to transport new drugs. We have just now completed the transaction for this month... Elder brother Ye, my Heavenly Serpent Gang is absolutely not involved in the business of other drugs, however about the new drugs, if we stop the business of new drugs then the trouble that befalls us wouldn't be small."

Heavenly Serpent Gang would obviously be in big trouble, after all their fate was totally dependent on this, and they might end up like Southern Heavenly Gates gang if they stopped the business of new drugs.

Ye Feng heard him properly and then nodded to indicate that he understood his point: "So, according to your opinion, you don't want to arouse the enemy's suspicions, of course from now onwards, do not let more people infected with this new drug's addiction."

The Scarred face man listened to him and nodded.

Ye Feng thought of something and asked: "What are the characteristics of this new drug? What kind of attraction does it hold?"

"Except for the drug effect being stronger and for longer time when compared to other drugs, rest is the same....."

The Scarred Face man frowned: "Those earliest targets were able to persist the addiction continuously for a year, however recently, it seems like they have suddenly disappeared."

"Disappeared?"

Ye Feng frowned but did not ask any more.

A kind of new drugs, which was really not the good thing, he had witnessed the condition of Su Menghan's cousin with his own eyes, when the drug addiction attacked him, his condition had become very miserable, his facial features had become very fearsome, he wanted to die but couldn't, it was extremely sinister and ruthless.

Ye Feng was emphatically not a kind-hearted person, he was too lazy and disinclined to manage this kind of stuff. But now, since Heavenly Serpent Gang was in his control, he would not allow any other force to interfere.

The mysterious organization was also capable to command the actions of the Scarred face man, how could Ye Feng accept this? The Scarred face man was now his puppet, and would always remain to be his puppet. Ye Feng wouldn't allow him to become the puppet of that mysterious organization! If he desired, so long as there was enough strength in his possession, he would fight over things and snatch them! This was one the rules of survival in the World of the Immortals, because if you wouldn't snatch things from others, others would snatch things from you, it was always the survival of the fittest.

And it was actually the same even on the Earth.

As per the view of Ye Feng, nowadays, people living in the city were being robbed in several ways almost every day, and there wasn't a single place where they didn't need to spend money. Even now, some hospitals in a big country like China were robbing their patients. They were "stealing money" from them in a very flagrant way.

Everyone said that you should always strive to work hard in order to lead a stable life, but no one ever said that you are being robbed constantly hence you must work hard, so that you become capable enough to be robbed again and again for the rest of your life.

“Cai Shao.....When you go to transport the next month’s quota of new drugs, I’m coming with you. I’d like to see what kind of extraordinary figure the other party is.”

Ye Feng finally made his decision.

“Understood!”

The Scarred face man’s complexion changed a bit, but he was now happy, so it meant that Elder brother Ye was going to come into action?

Too good!

He didn’t know that one year ago, how the largest Southern Heavenly Gates Gang was completely exterminated, but that method was inevitably very fearful, vigorous and resolute. He also didn’t know who was more powerful, martial artist Elder brother Ye or that mysterious organization?

“About the matter of new drugs, do the relevant departments know?”

Just before leaving, Ye Feng finally asked one more question.

“They don’t know.”

The Scarred face man shook the head: “Developing the registered drugs, we will control them, but majority of the addicts have gone missing. Moreover the quantity is not much and thus has not caused the government to suspect. Elder brother Ye, do not tell the government, because the government cannot solve this matter, instead

“I know, you don’t have to worry about it.”

Ye Feng interrupted his words: “Right, I have heard that Heavenly Serpent Gang has connections with some people in the government, who are they?”

“This Let’s say, we have a formal relationship which is slightly above a little?”

The Scarred face man was feeling a bit awkward, apparently he didn’t want to reveal the name of that person to Ye Feng but just by looking at the expression on Ye Feng’s face, he finally gave up and said: “We have connections with Chief Liu of northwest sub-bureau, the sub-department of public security bureau. Above that, we also have connections with the vice-chief of public security bureau headquarters. If Chief Liu fails to do our work, we ask him to come into action.”

“Northwest sub-bureau? Chief Liu?”

As soon as Ye Feng heard this name, he thought about the last time

when he was caught on the charges of visiting a prostitute. Under the façade of prostitution charges, Chief Liu wanted to seize the golden leaf grass from him. He was that pot-bellied middle-aged person with a typical Chinese face.

Unexpectedly, it seemed like that person was really very powerful, to think that the reach of his influence was all the way upto Heavenly Serpent Gang. But, Ye Feng still thought that he was quite a stupid chief.

“Then, it can be said that the last telephone call, that had really forced him to release me, definitely was from someone of Lin Clan. Just a telephone call from Lin clan scared Chief Liu so much that he was sweating profusely, now it seems like Lin clan indeed is very powerful.”

Right now, Ye Feng truly understood what it meant to be known as the first clan of Yanjing city. No wonder why the last time, that Lin clan's third son was being so rampant, should he go to curry favor from those people?

Chapter 041 - She Is Jealous

After the Scarred face man finished reporting things to Ye Feng, he immediately went to first deal with the drugs matter as instructed by Ye Feng.

A young member of Heavenly Serpent Gang was driving Ye Feng and Su Menghan to their respective homes. They left for Langfang on Saturday and spent the weekend there, but tomorrow morning, they must go to school.

The results of the second mock test were also about to come out, and at that time..... Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan sitting next to him and thought in his heart, when the results would come out, he would definitely be despised by her.

Well, anyway, after what happened, he did not want any connection with this little girl, not to mention, it seemed like she was very repugnant of his appearance.

Even in the trade fair, Su Menghan unknowingly caused a lot of trouble for Ye Feng. When he was in the trade fair and answered her phone call, she loudly called out his name “Ye Feng” which suddenly attracted the attention of Long Wan’er, and thank to that, he was almost caught by Dragon clan, not to forget that he also ended up killing a veteran martial artist like Wolf sword to escape from there.

If he had been caught by Long Wan’er then.....

Ye Feng simply could not imagine the consequences. There was a possibility that he would be dead by now if he had been caught by her.

“Especially, the Dragon clan must never find out that you are able to practice.....”

These words of Ye Wentian reverberated in his ears. Although he did not know about the reasons behind the enmity between Ye clan and Dragon clan, neither did he know about the agreement made between his grandfather and Dragon clan, but he was sure that his grandfather wouldn't deceive him, especially because of the seriousness of this matter.

Ye Feng's mind was constantly pondering about the things related to martial arts, and occasionally, he was paying attention to Su Menghan sitting next to him in the car. He noticed, now that she was going back home, she appeared more tranquil and was quietly looking out of the window. Ye Feng didn't know what was going on in her mind.

Su Menghan was deliberately keeping a distance from Ye Feng, so he thought that perhaps, she had come to hate him. In his past life, she never got to experience love and didn't know much about it, of course, he was emotionally inept in these matters.

To be honest, since he thought that he was hated by this Xiaohua, his mind was a little bit lost, but after some time, he stopped thinking about it. Right now, he did not have the luxury to think about such things.

On the way back home, the two didn't talk at all, and in a while, the young guy from Heavenly Serpent Gang drove them all the way to the

Qingfeng Park villa district and parked the car near the entrance.

“Listen, I will surely return the 200,000.”

Su Menghan said this and elegantly came out of the car. She didn't look back and directly entered the villa district. Her exquisite back profile appeared incomparably attractive.

Ye Feng did not say anything, he got out of the car and was about to walk towards his villa, but was suddenly stopped by the young guy.

Ye Feng turned his head to take a look at the young guy. He was tall, had a very beautiful pair of eyes and appeared like a lively guy.

However, right now, he was in front of Ye Feng so instead of displaying his usually lively attitude, he said politely in a timid manner: “Elder brother Ye, I want to say something but don't know whether it is appropriate to say this right now.”

“If you have something to say, speak frankly.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“I think, Ms. Ye is definitely jealous. Elder brother Ye, cannot you see it yet?”

The young guy calmed down and said in a determined manner while looking at Su Menghan's slender silhouette.

“What? She is jealous?”

Ye Feng totally did not expect to hear such a thing from this young guy, so he was a bit surprised: “Why do you think that?”

When the young guy noticed that Ye Feng seemed interested in this topic, his spirit immediately rallied up and he said: “This is based on my research on the girls. Elder brother Ye, you have not paid attention, but judging from the eyes, demeanor and behavior of Ms. Ye, I am 100% sure that she is jealous! She is not talking to you, but that’s not because she is mad at you, Elder brother Ye, I think perhaps Ms. Ye knows that you have another woman out there?”

“.....”

Ye Feng was wondering, did he really have another woman?

However right then, the image of Long Wan’er standing at the entrance of the hospital suddenly flashed in his mind.

“Hey, could it be”

Ye Feng remembered and suddenly understood everything. During this trip to Langfang, she indeed fell in love with him, but after the Long Wan’er incident took place, she must have gotten jealous.

“What is your name?”

Ye Feng asked from the young guy, showing that he was giving importance to him, after all his words broke Ye Feng's assumption that Su Menghan probably hated him.

“Everybody calls me Bei, my full name is Zhao Yibei, ha ha, Elder brother Ye can ask me anything.”

Bei gave a very warm self-introduction then said: “Moreover, boss has especially asked me to be your chauffeur.”

“Bei? Excellent name.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Well, I am not so inclined about having a chauffeur to drive me around all the time, but whenever I am in need, I will give you a call.”

He glanced at the nearby luxury car, a glacier silver BMW seven liner, it was a luxury car just like the one used by Su Menghan's father. Although it looked just like the luxury cars generally used by most elites, but if he rode this car to the school daily, then after a few days, the whole school would come to know him, and he didn't want to be surrounded by onlookers.

“Such being the case, Elder brother Ye, I am sending you a text message containing my phone number, you save my number and if there's anything you need from me, just give me a call!”

Zhao Yibei pulled out his cell phone and sent a text message to Ye

Feng. When the Scarred face man gave him the job to drive Ye Feng and Su Menghan to Qingfeng Park, he also gave Ye Feng's number to him. That's how Ye Feng finally came to know that Zhao Yibei was very much trusted by the Scarred face man.

“Good, you can leave now, I am also heading home.”

Ye Feng waved while saving Bei's number in his cell phone.

He was not much interested in beautiful women or external beauty to be specific, in fact, before he would have enough strength to defend himself, he did not want to consider these matters. Now, however, the matter about Su Menghan was placed in front of him.

In fact, in the World of the Immortals, he had seen many stunning beauties like Su Menghan. However compared to others, in the last couple of days, he witnessed an out of the ordinary side of Su Menghan, which left a profound impression on his heart.

In Langfang, considering all her selfless actions to save her cousin and her family, where could one find such a good girl in today's society? Ye Feng suddenly felt, this type of selfless compassion for others had certainly been contaminated in the world now-a-days. The biggest tragedy was that he came to this world only to witness that it had been thoroughly polluted.

Never before had he met a beautiful girl who was actually so possessive of what she thought should belong to her, but in case of Su Menghan, she probably held a different perception about the whole thing.

“Well, I don’t need to figure it out all at once.”

Ye Feng set a firm resolve and walked towards his villa. But on the way, he accidentally saw Su Menghan, who was surprisingly blocked outside her own villa entrance and it seemed like she wasn’t allowed to go inside!

The one blocking her was actually a stylish woman, carrying a fancy handbag on her arm. She was in a heavy make-up, but appeared to be at least 30 years old. From her stance and attitude, she appeared like a wealthy wife, but why was she here and why was she blocking Su Menghan from going inside?

“I heard you went to Langfang? This is so sentimental.”

The stylish woman, who was standing in front of Su Menghan, sneered and said: “Why did you go to see your grandmother? In the past, she was so firmly against my marriage with your dad, I may have a vivid memory, but it’s such a pity, you only got to see her grave, right?”

Su Menghan’s shoulder trembled with anger: “You are quite shameless! Was it you who harmed my grandmother?”

“I didn’t say that. But then, since you really went to that place, I must ask Su Xinchang how to deal with this. Either, he will have to stop recognizing you as his daughter or divorce me. He can have me or he can have you. If he wants me then he cannot keep you with him! You have been raised from childhood to adulthood on the money of my Xie clan, but you actually dared to go back..... ”

The jealousy was clearly visible in the eyes of this stylish woman, as she said these words sarcastically, while at the same time, she pulled out a cell phone.

Ye Feng was watching from afar and thought in his heart, was this the stepmother of Su Menghan? She really was a narrow-minded person.

Chapter 042 - Su Xinchang's Choice

The environment in the 'Qingfeng Park' was very elegant and pleasant, fresh and clean air, a lush flower garden on the roadside, a tree-lined shade. Such type of residential area was rarely seen throughout Yanjing city.

However, in front of the villa, there were three people confronting each other, the atmosphere appeared quite tensed, they were Ye Feng, Su Menghan and her stepmother.

“Su Menghan, what’s the matter?”

Ye Feng asked.

“This has nothing to do with you, you should go back now.”

Although Su Menghan was very indignant in her heart, but still, she did not want Ye Feng to interfere in this matter.

“No, I have something to tell you”.

Ye Feng did not leave, rather continued: “But before that, I will first help you out in solving this problem.”

“You will solve this?”

Su Menghan snorted lightly, since she had never been in favor of Ye Feng's way of resorting to violence to sort out any kind of problem: "There are a lot of things that can't be solved by fighting."

"Rest assured, I don't just fight all the time."

Ye Feng smiled softly.

At this time, that stylish woman, who was standing in front of them, finally explained everything about the current situation to Su Xinchang on a phone call, the way she was expressing things was very rude, persistent and unreasonable.

From the phone call, Ye Feng knew by now that this woman was called 'Xie Min'. Not only Xie Clan was a very powerful clan, but also on the basis of strength, it ranked among the top powerful clans of Yanjing. Because of Xie Min, Su Xinchang had been able to bring his company 'Su Sheng group' to great heights of success.

Su Xinchang figured out that things had become quite complicated here, so he said somewhat anxiously that he would come quickly to solve this issue, so she must not act rashly.

After hanging up the phone, Xie Min elegantly put her latest 'Iphone model' back into her branded 'Louis Vuitton' handbag. She then raised her head and disrespectfully looked at Ye Feng.

"Come to think of it, it seems this little fox has attracted a man and

making him to help her out? However, this boy should better get lost, since in this world, there are some things that you just cannot take care of.”

Xie Min had heard the talk of these two people, but she did not actually care.

She knew that yesterday, this boy accompanied Su Menghan to go to Langfang. Xie Min investigated few matters related to him, and on the basis of that, in her opinion, Ye Feng was just an ordinary high school student, at most, above a little, last time he was caught on the charges of visiting prostitute, but was released later.

In case, the son of Xie Clan got involved in prostitution, then the trivial Public Security Bureau could not dare to arrest him, so she came to the conclusion that in comparison, Ye Feng was just an ordinary boy and nothing else.

“You want me to get lost?”

Ye Feng heard what she said and lightly replied: “It completely depends on whether you have the capability to do that.”

“Now this young boy is being so arrogant?”

Xie Min smiled contemptuously, then smiled and looked at Su Menghan: “If I were you, I would not have chosen such a callow boy. My second uncle desires an attractive young woman, he is a very kind and matured man, and has much more capability than this boy. Want me to

introduce you to him?”

“Shameless!”

Su Menghan’s whole body started trembling madly with rage. She could not believe that this woman would be so virulent.

Was this something a stepmother should say?

“Is it?”

Ye Feng noticed that Su Menghan was trembling, so he gently put his arm around her shoulder to comfort her then he looked at Xie Min and said: “If I were Su Xinchang, I also wouldn’t have chosen an ugly old woman like you as my wife, when there is such a beautiful attractive secretary always around me?”

Ye Feng still remembered from the last time about Su Xinchang’s assistant and driver, Hu Meimei. Ye Feng obviously knew very well what he was doing, comparing a more attractive woman with Xie Min and moreover in front of her.....

“Humph, then wait and see. You are just a naïve young boy, do you actually think that Su Xinchang will dare to find another woman behind my back?”

Xie Min sneered and did not pay attention to what he said.

In her heart, she knew that at present, Su Xinchang was fully dependent on her Xie Clan, if he dared to find a woman outside, wouldn't he be afraid of offending her Xie Clan?

She finally made up her mind that this time, she would force Su Xinchang to make a choice at any cost. It was because she had been married to Su Xinchang 10 years ago, and still had no child, Su Menghan was the daughter of his ex-wife, which was certainly causing more and more uneasiness in her heart.

Ye Feng noticed that she did not believe him, so he just smiled and became totally disinclined to say anything else to this vixen, now he just waited for Su Xinchang to come and say something.

Su Menghan gently grabbed his shoulder because she was feeling very warm under his arm. Suddenly she felt that since Ye Feng was there by her side, she didn't need to fear anyone, whether it was Xie Min or her own father, Su Xinchang.

All along, Su Xinchang had always been a henpecked husband, and due to that, he used to act very strictly towards Su Menghan to discipline her. While in the eyes of others, she might be a school beauty who belonged to a very good family with good financial condition and bright future, but the fact was that she had no freedom at all in her own life.

In case Su Xinchang really chose to abandon her, then, she would finally be released from the cage, with basically nothing to regret about.

Su Xinchang arrived quickly.

He never thought that Xie Min would actually be spying on Su Menghan, and she would also come to know about her trip to Langfang and that too so quickly. After suddenly encountering this kind of situation, he was very restless, burning with impatience and was being edgy to get over there as soon as possible.

When the BMW car stopped at the entrance of the villa, a middle-aged man, wearing a western style suit, walked down from the passenger seat, it was Su Xinchang. Ye Feng noticed that the person who was driving the car was that pretty and matured, Hu Meimei, however she did not get off the car to follow her boss, as she obviously knew she had no right to participate in this matter.

Originally Su Xinchang was a matured and steady man, who always kept a dignified look on his face, but at present, he had tightened his eyebrows, obviously there was something bothering him.

“Menghan, Min, what are you doing?”

Su Xinchang sighed and asked while walking towards them.

“Ask that from your dear daughter, where was she for last two days?”

Xie Min groaned loudly.

“You didn’t go to Langfang?”

Su Xinchang then clapped his hands and then he moved forward to hold the hands of Xie Min, sincerely saying: “This is the first and last

time, it won't happen again, just calm down, ok?"

"No, this time you have to give me an explanation."

Xie Min said this harshly and pointed at Su Menghan: "Either choose her or choose me, you have to make the choice right now!"

It appeared just like how the salt wouldn't enter into the oil, the same way, regardless of what he was saying, it wouldn't change her decision since she already made up her mind.

Su Menghan was standing on one side and was just looking at them without speaking a single word. Ye Feng was also very calm, they just wanted to see what choice Su Xinchang would make.

If he would select Su Menghan and give divorce to Xie Min, then fortunately, he would be considered as a competent father. However, if he would choose to continue to rely on Xie Clan, and abandon Su Menghan, then that would be very disappointing thing and he would certainly fail as a father.

For Su Xinchang, making this choice was undoubtedly very difficult.

He tried every means to persuade Xie Min, but she was very stubborn and was not willing to change her mind. Every time she saw Su Menghan, she would feel a thorn in her heart, and this stinging pain had kept her unhappy for the last ten years.

If it continued like this, then one day, she would turn insane.

She was indifferently looking at Ye Feng and Su Menghan standing close to each other, no matter what Su Xinchang said, she would never change her decision.

After a long time, finally, Su Xinchang also noticed that she was not going to change her mind. He couldn't do anything and just helplessly sighed.

He then looked at Su Menghan as well as Ye Feng, who was standing beside her. His heart was feeling very uncomfortable, unfortunately with great difficulty, he managed to create a good relationship between his daughter Su Menghan and Ye Feng, but now after coming so far, he was actually forced to make this kind of choice.

“Su Menghan, come with me.”

Su Xinchang seemed quite determined and beckoned his daughter, while he simultaneously walked to the one side, apparently to have a talk with her in private.

“If you have something to say, speak frankly, what are you so ashamed of?”

Su Menghan said in a very cold voice. She already guessed her father's choice, because for him, his business empire was way more important than anything else.....

Chapter 043 - Live In A Room?

Su Xinchang was a bit embarrassed saying something like this to his own daughter, Su Menghan, however seeing her resolute demeanor, he cleared his throat and said: “Let’s say like this, until you graduate from the college, I will be responsible for all the expenses needed for your studies and livelihood.”

He said that but it sounded quite fuzzy, however everybody understood the meaning behind what he said, that he was only responsible for fostering Su Menghan till she would graduate, later he wouldn’t take care of her.

In other words, he would not give divorce to Xie Min, instead he chose her over Su Menghan, and drew a clear dividing line between his relationships.

He had his consideration, he had found out that Ye Feng had some high level connection with Heavenly Serpent Gang, but besides that, he didn’t know anything else. He certainly didn’t have any idea about the relationship between Ye Feng and Lin Clan, that sort of top layered influence was considered as a very big connection for him about which he was usually unable to think.

Originally, he just wanted Su Menghan to win over Ye Feng, after that, it would be quite easy for Xie Clan to join hands with Heavenly Serpent Gang. In this way, if the strength of two second-class influences would become one and operate well, then he could definitely advance into the first-class!

However now, he could only discard one and choose one of the more stable ones. Apparently, Heavenly Serpent Gang was not the reasonable option for him. But Xie Clan had been helping him out for more than 10 years, so if he must make a choice then obviously he would choose Xie Clan.

“Thank you, but I do not need your support.”

Su Menghan looked at him coldly, then turned around and walked away.

“Hey, where are you going?”

Ye Feng did not expect that this little girl would be so strong, which startled him a bit.

“Why does it matter to you?”

Su Menghan stopped but did not look back, however Ye Feng actually noticed her weeping voice and trembling shoulders.

While facing such type of situation, no matter how matured and strong one was mentally, still it would be a very heavy blow for them. Moreover, Su Menghan was just a high school student, hearing such a cruel sentence from her father, Su Xinchang, was extremely painful for her, she suddenly felt like the whole heaven was collapsing upon her and there was no place for her to hide. She was filled with grievances but couldn't find a person to complain to, and cry over their shoulder.

She turned her head firmly, not because of her hate and anger, just because she wanted to hide her tears.

Seeing her in such a miserable condition caused a slight pain in Ye Feng's heart, he moved forward and held her but she wanted to cast him off, but could she actually succeed to do so?"

"I don't know that woman who appeared at the entrance of the People's Hospital, you don't have to misunderstand this. Also, if you cannot stay at your own place, want to live in my villa?"

Ye Feng directly asked.

Su Menghan heard this and finally stopped her footsteps.

In the eyes of Ye Feng, her back profile was very exquisite, her trembling shoulders were silhouetted against the faint shade of trees around there, constituting a beautiful picture of hers. What a pity that the figure of this pain stricken character was letting the whole picture seem as if it was dyed with a layer of hazy sadness.

She stood still and was taking long time thinking about his proposal.

"Isn't it inconvenient for you?"

She finally asked something from him but still without looking back. She did not want to live at her home, since it would be very difficult and

painful for her to live there. However, to go outside and live without money? But if she lived in the house of Ye Feng, wouldn't it be embarrassing for her? Let alone, she was a young girl and Ye Feng was a lone male.....

“Villa is so big, how can it be convenient?”

Ye Feng asked that when he saw Su Menghan was shedding tears, he couldn't help her with her pain but just wanted to protect her, by protecting the good, honest and kind-hearted side of this girl.

Now, he was in this world, who knew whether he could return to the World of the Immortals or not. In such case, he might as well do something good for this world, at least, for the people around him.

“Well, I'll pay the rent.”

Su Menghan finally nodded. Although she was in an extremely sad state, but still she could understand her situation pretty well. If she didn't live in her own home, and also didn't want to go over to Ye Feng's home, then where she would live?

The BMW car silently passed away from their side, Su Xinchang was sitting on the back seat, he was closing the car windows, at the same time was looking at Su Menghan with some regret as if he was trying to say that he would definitely compensate to her. While, Xie Min was sitting beside him and was looking at them in a prideful manner as if proudly claiming that she finally got the victory.

However Su Menghan didn't look at them, she turned away and walked toward the villa of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng looked at Su Xinchang faintly, from now onwards this person would be considered as the most hated person by Su Menghan. Who was once her father but now, he was just going to be her enemy in the future. For Ye Feng, it didn't have any big effect on his heart, since in the World of the Immortals, such things used to happen plenty of times. However, this kind of thing was actually rarely seen on the Earth.

Ye Feng overtook her, and just then, suddenly her cell phone rang up and she received a text message.

She pulled out her phone to look at it, when she saw the text message, she couldn't control herself from snorting loudly. Ye Feng looked at the message and discovered that it was a message informing that her bank balance was now more than a million. Needless to say that it was Su Xinchang who did this as compensation. Moreover, he apparently did this while hiding it from his wife, Xie Min.

Seeing that, Su Menghan slightly felt better in her heart.

However, Ye Feng didn't think that Su Xinchang did this all because of his conscience. In his view, Su Xinchang was actually pretending that he was still concerned about Su Menghan, but she couldn't see that.

Su Xinchang was a businessman who just wanted stability in his business. In this case, he would never completely cut off relationship from anyone, whom he could use in the future, including Su Menghan. Because for him, any type of relationship would likely bring in new

business opportunities.

If Ye Feng didn't guess wrong, then few days later, Su Xinchang would show his good will to Su Menghan and strive for her forgiveness. Perhaps in Su Xinchang's eyes, Su Menghan was just a young female high school student who could be swindled quite easily.

Ye Feng looked at the BMW car departing and some thoughts cropped up in his mind, if that was the case, then he would have to look after Su Menghan very carefully, he wouldn't allow her to be deceived once again.

If he really loved his daughter, then for the sake of Xie Min, would he make his daughter go through so much pain? No matter what Su Xinchang would do in the future, this matter was enough to reveal his true nature to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng opened the door of his villa and walked inside with Su Menghan.

"Do you have a vacant room? Firstly, I will move everything here from the next door."

She was a very strong girl, she didn't cry for longer period of time, or she already knew that it would be useless to cry anymore. Instead, she had quickly started to consider her future matters. At present, she was abandoned by her own father, and it was the very critical moment for her since her college entrance examination was about to start soon, if the college entrance examination result wouldn't come out favorable then her future would be completely in the dark.

She absolutely did not want to be like that Xie Min, who relied on her face and figure to find a man for herself.

She wanted to rely on her own efforts, to obtain enough to make Su Xinchang regret his decision!

“Vacant room.....”

When she asked this question from Ye Feng, it suddenly stunned him. Because at this time, he remembered that even in his own villa, he couldn't mess around and wander freely at his own will, otherwise that old man would certainly not let him off so easily!

The places accessibly to him included a bedroom, a bathroom and a hall. As for the kitchen, a young guy like him, who only liked to play online game, certainly never needed one.

What should he do now, at this time, he certainly couldn't drive her out? Or should both of them live in a room? Should he make her go to find some other place to live, in any case she now had 1 million.....

Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan and somewhat hesitated.

“What happened?”

Su Menghan somewhat strangely looked at him: “You don't have a vacant room?”

All the villas of Qingfeng Park had same design. She also remembered that the adjacent villa had three bedrooms, could it be that Ye Feng didn't know yet?

Chapter 044 - Gently

Ye Feng was a bit embarrassed since he really had no extra vacant room.

“Well, you sleep in the bedroom, and I will sleep in the hall.”

He said that while taking her along with him to the second floor: “You can’t go to the other rooms except this bedroom, anyway you tidy up, I am going downstairs.”

“This.....”

Su Menghan felt strangely embarrassed, obviously she wanted to freeload in the bedroom, but still how could she make Ye Feng completely go out of his own bedroom? Although she had no idea why she couldn’t enter the rest of the rooms, but she did not ask anything about it. Now, Ye Feng had become even more mysterious in her eyes.

“Don’t be embarrassed, how can I possibly make a girl sleep in the hall?”

Ye Feng said that to her, as for him it didn’t matter where he lived at all, since in the World of the Immortals, he used to sleep in the caves, covered with grass. In comparison to that, the hall of this villa was way better than his expectation, it was quite luxurious for him.

“Oh.”

Seeing him insisting in this way, Su Menghan couldn't bring herself to decline him, but she paused for a moment, and then with a slight shy smile on her face, she rested her both hands on his shoulders, and while he was completely unprepared, she gently kissed him on his cheeks.

Since Ye Feng was completely unprepared, he gawked.

“Ye Feng, thank you. When we will pass the university entrance exam, then we can start dating each other

While she was saying so, her face was red, she was blushing very hard, then she turned around to go downstairs, so that she could go to her dad's villa and start preparing her things to move over here. Moreover, she felt that just a moment ago, Ye Feng gave a proper explanation to her about the disheveled beauty from the hospital's entrance, perhaps because he was definitely afraid of her misunderstanding things if left unexplained.

Why would he be afraid of her misunderstanding? It was because he certainly had now started liking her, otherwise like always, Ye Feng could continue to behave coldly and indifferently towards her.

While looking at her slim and slender back profile, Ye Feng lifted his hand to gently caress that place where she just kissed him, he felt very funny seeing that this little girl was naturally very generous and cheerful.

However, come to think of it, it was not right, start dating after passing the university exam?

Suddenly, the words of his grandfather echoed in his mind, right after he would get admission in Yanjing University, he would be introduced to Miss Lin, at that time what he would do?

Well, Ye Feng shook his head and decided not to think about such things rightnow. He then considered about the other matter and immediately gave a phone call to Ou B and asked him about the spirit stone from last time.

“Are you interested in it? It’s a little weird though. You wait, I will ask dad to get some information about it and send it to you as soon as possible.”

Ou B hung up the phone after he finished saying.

Ye Feng curled up his bedding from the bedroom and spread it in the hall downstairs properly. After that, he sat and started to expand his meridians through which the zhenqi circulated. Half a month before, he had tried really hard continuously to do so, and by now he had almost expanded his meridians twice the earlier width, which was quite enough to hold the zhenqi up to the cultivation of 5 or 6 years.

To expand the meridians, he now needed to constantly keep practicing, so he couldn’t waste time, not even a tiny bit.

When Su Menghan came in holding piles of stuffs in her hands, she saw him sitting in some strange way, it seemed just like the movies of the martial arts, where people used to practice for the internal strength.

She did not think too much about and just shouted: “Ye Feng, just remember, I am going to believe you only this one time, got it?”

After saying that she waited for a moment, but seeing that Ye Feng didn't respond to it, she took her stuff and went upstairs. Actually, she didn't want to let Ye Feng help her all the time, she could manage this thing on her own, instead she never wanted to make others help her. Not to mention, it appeared from the appearance of Ye Feng like he was very busy.

Ye Feng heard her words which totally baffled him, but then he thought about it and understood the hidden meaning behind what she said. It was about the matter of Long Wan'er. Obviously, Su Menghan held a grudge against Long Wan'er now, if she ever discovered Ye Feng entangled with Long Wan'er again then she certainly would never forgive him.

Regarding this, Ye Feng didn't have anything to feel, actually in reality, he had nothing to do with that Long Wan'er, so he had no need to be worried about it at all. As long as Long Wan'er wouldn't know that he was the masked man from last night, the opposite party absolutely would not be able to find him.

When he listened to the sound of the footsteps of Su Menghan going upstairs, he felt a bit relieved thinking that, now it seemed like this girl had very quickly recovered from the blow Su Xinchang gave her today.

Ye Feng had no idea that originally, Su Xinchang had never much cared about Su Menghan since beginning. Infact, the present situation

was not at all worse, it had always been like this for Su Menghan. But today, it seemed like the reward of finally obtaining her love probably changed Su Menghan's mood for the better.

This whole afternoon , Su Menghan was busy in tidying things up in the bedroom, while on the other hand this whole time, Ye Feng was in the hall, sitting and expanding his zhenqi meridians.

After tidying things up, Su Menghan was perspiring heavily, she went downstairs and saw that Ye Feng was still sitting in the same pose, she felt even more strange in her heart. However, since she had been a very clever and smart girl, she decided not to disturb him, instead she entered the bathroom and started preparing everything for taking a comfortable bath.

Originally, this villa had bathrooms both upstairs and downstairs, but Ye Feng was warned by the old man 'Ye Wentian', not to go in the upstairs bathroom, so its door was locked and it couldn't be opened unless it was violently destroyed.

Su Menghan could only take shower downstairs.

Before entering the bathroom, she secretly looked at Ye Feng and thought about that day when he climbed up the building two weeks ago and suddenly turned and ended up seeing her taking bath, just by thinking about this she couldn't help herself from blushing.

She softly entered the bathroom, locked the door and very soon the sound of the showering water started coming out from the bathroom.

When Ye Feng listened to the sound of rushing water from the bathroom, he could not help but think about the day he arrived into this world and immediately saw her white bare body, thinking several times of holding her soft fragrant body, naturally he felt somewhat hot in his heart.

“Small Bee, Small Bee, open the door, Ouge, has come!” (Ouge – Ou Elder brother)

Suddenly the doorbell rang up.

Ye Feng was taken aback, this boy could not make a phone call to inform before coming over?

He got up and stretched his body, right now, his strength as compared to his rebirth time on the Earth had definitely grown up, but he just didn't know how many times he became stronger. The feeling that he was getting stronger bit by bit made him very happy and satisfied. Moreover, just by becoming stronger day by day, he could achieve some sense of security.

Ye Feng didn't hold the same sense of security as that Lin Clan's Sanshao (third son). No matter how strong his family background was, there would always be some people trying to kill him, so how could he feel relaxed just by depending on the strong backing of his family background.

He stood up, opened the entrance's door and saw Ou B wearing a casual shirt, seemingly in a very high spirit standing at the entrance, holding some photos in his hands.

“Small Bee, from the last time, both the spirit stone and the white Yin Yang fish were sold to us by a tomb raider.”

Ou B seeing Ye Feng, smiled heartily: “An ancient grave in Changbai Mountains, but also took many pictures and insisted to sell to us together with the things. Dad spent 10,000 to buy these photos, really awful..... However, these photos are actually very strange, it seems like there is a demoness in them.”

There was a demoness?

Ye Feng felt a little strange, such things also existed in this world?

“Hey, Small Bee, is there someone in your bathroom?”

Ou B listened carefully and really heard the sound of running water, he somewhat strangely looked inside because he remembered that previously, there was just Ye Feng who had been living in this villa all alone. He looked at Ye Feng and from his appearance, it didn't seem like Ye Feng had just taken a shower.

“This.....”

Ye Feng remained surprised for a moment, as he didn't know how to explain this.

Just then, the sound of water rushing in the bathroom suddenly

stopped, followed by a crisp and clear voice of a girl: “Ye Feng, please pass me the electric hair dryer, I forgot to bring it in with me

Both Ou B and Ye Feng were simulatanously stunned for a while.

Chapter 045 - Back View Of Beautiful Female Master

Ou B listened that and thought, wasn't this the voice of his school's Xiaohua?

He suddenly pointed to Ye Feng: "Small Bee, isn't that Su Menghan?"

Ye Feng coughed: "Keke, her father has driven her out, hence she is temporarily living in my"

"Holy fucking crap!"

Ou B suddenly started feeling dizzy, Su Menghan and Ye Feng were unexpectedly living together? On top of that, she was taking showed right now, and also asked him to hand over electric hair dryer to her?

If this news reached the school, it would definitely become the hottest topic before the college entrance examination!

Moreover, Su Menghan had been driven out by her own father? Wasn't she the daughter of the chairman of Su Sheng group, which was considered as a very rich family, how could she be driven out was it because of Ye Feng?

Ou B stared at Ye Feng: "You haven't explained it honestly and properly, what's the matter?"

“Actually, I accompanied her to a trip to Langfang City yesterday

Ye Feng finally let go, since even he was not clear that Su Menghan’s trip to Langfang yesterday would create so many troubles. But he still remembered that just after they arrived in Langfang and got off the train, at that time, both sides didn’t see pleasing to each other’s eyes.

“So her family agrees to you and her living under the same roof?”

Ou B was still feeling strange about all this.

“The situation is more complicated, I think you don’t need to know. By the way, about these things, I will talk about it more specifically tomorrow in the school, until then, Bye-Bye.”

Ye Feng snatched those photos and other materials from his hands, and pushed him outside the door and with a “bang”, he shut the door. He did not want to wait even a single minute during Su Menghan’s showering time or else she could be seen by Ou B.

Only Ye Feng could look at her in such a situation and no one else.

“Well done! Small bee, you really have the attraction towards opposite sex, you’re a real guy indeed!”

Ou B shouted from outside but he was actually feeling very uncomfortable.

“Thanks Ouge!” (Ouge – Ou elder brother)

Ye Feng shouted from inside.

“Dman! This is the first time I have heard you calling me that, if you continue to call me that in the future, then this Ouge will forgive you, ha ha ha!”

Ou B laughed openly from the bottom of his heart.

“Alright then, there is no problem in it!”

Ye Feng laughed as well from the bottom of his heart, this really touched his heart. Previously in the World of the Immortals, he never had such type of friend, only he had a good relationship with his beautiful female master.

Worthy of being called best buddies.

After that, Ye Feng turned his head to place those pictures on the table, he then looked for the electric hair dryer, moved towards the bathroom entrance and knocked on the door.

In a while, a snow-white tender-looking beautiful hand quietly extended out from the bathroom door, and was slightly shivering.

Ye Feng could not help but smile, was she afraid of him that he would

abruptly enter the bathroom, which was against the discipline? After putting the hair dryer in her snow-white hand, Ye Feng turned around and left and heard the bathroom door being shut firmly and quickly.

But he did not care about it, instead he came to the table all prepared to have a look at the pack of materials, brought by Ou B.

On top of the photocopy of the antique appraisal report there was some information which was about stuffs which were discovered from that ancient tomb including that White jade Yin and Yang fish.

Ye Feng could not help but glance at that information, which suddenly startled him!

That White jade Yin and Yang fish dated back to nearly 5000 years, excavated out from the Shang Dynasty tomb site, so what Ou A described about it to Lin Clan's Sanshao was exactly the same as written here and also the suggested price was around one million or even more.

“Ou B, that boy, he lied when he introduced me to it?”

Ye Feng thought to himself and suddenly felt a surge of warm feelings in his chest, his heart was moved. That kid wanted to introduce Ye Feng to some good stuff, but was afraid that Ye Feng would not be able to afford, thus he deliberately decreased the price so much. One must know, if Ye Feng had bought it for 150,000 then Ou B's father would definitely have lost around 1 million!

Moreover, Ou A also did not deceive Lin Clan's Sanshao. Although he

was a crafty profiteer, but still, he carefully considered whom to make his target. Those sort of rich people, who held a very high status like Lin Clan's Sanshao, frequently used to buy antiques, so wouldn't they have some kind of medium to identify the age of the antiques? Deceiving him would be just like courting death.

Ye Feng knew already that last time, Oushi Antique Store absolutely did business at a loss.

“But Uncle Ou is really a good man. In the World of the Immortals, how could I possibly meet such an uncle.”

A self-ridiculing smile flashed on his face, because last time, he thought that Ou A was a very smart and crafty profiteer, but infact there was an other side to him, even if he lost a big amount of money to compensate three times to Lin Clan's Sanshao, still he didn't wrinkle his eyebrows and kept a smiling face throughout.

“Yanjing's Lin Clan just like the World of the Immortals, same thing happens here as well, those who posses strength and power can humiliate other people at whim?”

Ye Feng eyes flashed with a touch of coldness, since Yanjing's Lin Clan didn't get success in creating a good impression on Ye Feng. Moreover, the ridiculous point was that his grandfather, Ye Wentian, had given him the direction that if he ever came across any problematic matter, at that time he must ask Lin Clan for help.

Now, even if Ye Feng was in dire need of help, he would never go to this so-called Lin Clan of Yanjing.

He flipped altogether ten documents about unearthed jade carvings, however most of them were damaged, only that White Yin and Yang fish was preserved properly. But still, what a pity it was also pulverized by those servants of Lin Clan's Sanshao.

As for that half spirit stone, it looked more like an ordinary stone, furthermore, Ou A most likely hadn't done its appraisal. However, occasionally he used to meet with Huang Lao outside, at that time he must have mentioned about the appearance of that spirit stone to him. On the basis of that description, Huang Lao said that it might be a good stuff.

Just under the appraisal report, there was the picture sold by the tomb raider.

Ye Feng picked it up and looked at it, but suddenly the color of his face became pale, there was a look of total disbelief in his eyes!

“This..... how is this possible? Master?”

In this fuzzy picture, there was a broad underground stone chamber, surrounded by four large-scale stone pillars, in the stone chamber the junk goods were scattered everywhere in disorder, it could be seen from the picture that the stone chamber was accessible from all the directions.

In a corner of the path, there was a rear view of a female which was incomparably familiar to Ye Feng, dressed in a snow white gauze clothes, long beautiful hair swept up in a bunch, hanging down to the buttocks, light and elegant stature, the back view suggested as if she was trying to

make a turn, probably to leave the line of sight of that tomb raider.

Although the picture was quite blurred, difficult to see anything clearly, but to Ye Feng, being constantly together for ten years with his beautiful female master, even if the picture was quite blurred, still it was impossible for him to make a mistake in recognizing her!

Ye Feng was all fired up with excitement instantly, his both hands were shaking while holding that picture.

“It really is my master?”

He quickly dropped all other photos from his hands, and started looking at some other pictures, altogether there was a total of seven pictures and each picture had a fuzzy back in it, and from the memories of his beautiful female master deeply engraved in his mind, Ye Feng was now 100% sure that the back view in this picture was exactly the same like his master's.

Su Feiying, also famous as the the Ice Fairy in the World of the Immortals. She was the leader of Star Tomb faction, and throughout her life, she only received Ye Feng as her disciple, and devotedly taught him.

Ye Feng still remembered that at that time, just in order to surpass the hundred years of cultivation, a great war was going on between his master and the devil lord of Fire Dragon Cave. While fighting all the way, they went deeper into the Fire Dragon Cave and he lost their trail. When he also went into the depths of Fire Dragon Cave, he only saw the traces of a fierce battle along the way, but could not find anyone's trace.

“Time wise could it be that master came here even before I came here?”

Ye Feng could not help but guess so.

His train of thoughts had started rolling all over, in any event, he must go to that Shang Dynasty tomb site in Changbai Mountains to check it out. Whether it was back view of his master on the picture or not, atleast, that place had produced a spirit stone and might have several more, so it was worth going there eitherway.

“No, perhaps that spirit stone was actually brought in this world by master?”

Ye Feng suddenly thought so, but he knew that merely guessing was just a waste of time, the key was that he must find out the truth himself.

“Ye Feng, what are you looking at?”

Su Menghan came out properly dressed after taking shower, but when she saw Ye Feng, lost in thoughts while carefully looking at something, she found it somewhat strange and couldn't control herself and asked curiously.

Chapter 046 - Su Xinchang's Invitation

Ye Feng was feeling a bit unsettled, the moment he heard the voice of Su Menghan, he collected all the photos and with an upward movement he replied: "Nothing."

He turned his head towards her and saw she was well-dressed, wearing a long sleeved pink T-shirt in which there was a printed cute teddy bear design on its chest area, an ordinary light colored jeans, hair was tied up in a cute & long ponytail braid, all these things made her transform into a simple and lively girl at present when compared from her pure and beautiful style from earlier.

The most attractive thing was present under the pink cloth around her chest area, those firm and arrogant looking pair, which was constantly attracting the eyes of Ye Feng and he couldn't control himself from glancing at them numerous times. Actually he thought to himself that this little girl would definitely not lose to Long Wan'er in this respect. Just by looking at them closely, it could be said that both of them would have fifty-fifty chance of victory.

"What are you looking at?"

Su Menghan had already tracked his eyes and blushed slightly: "Never mind, anyway I must go now, I will be back later."

Ye Feng responded just by seeing her in this appearance, he already had detected that she dressed like this since she had to go out, he felt a bit strange: "at this time of evening, where do you have to go?"

“My Father.....”

Su Menghan somewhat hesitated, but then replied: “My dad called me up in the afternoon, he has invited me to dinner in the Jinghua Grand Hotel.”

“Oh, Ok.”

Ye Feng nodded and didn't care about it, the opposite party would start its movement this quickly had already been anticipated by him. However, at present, he didn't want to think about this matter.

Was Su Feiying really there in Shang Dynasty tomb site of Changbai Mountain?

Su Menghan noticed that he was a little lost and restless, that aroused some doubts in her mind, but she did not ask anything, instead she said: “Ok, then I am leaving.”

“Wait, let me do a phone call first.

Ye Feng stopped her and then pulled out his cell phone and called Ou B.

The other party quickly picked up the phone, and with some doubts he answered: “Small Bee, what happened, is there any problem in the data?”

“Nothing, however I want to know where the tomb site is located, I want to go over there.”

Ye Feng anxiously asked this.

“Regarding this, I really don’t know.”

Ou B reluctantly said: “that tomb raider won’t tell us about this. Still, if you want to know, then just ask from that tomb raider, however that mysterious person is very unpredictable, he appears and disappears by his own mood, my dad also failed to get in touch with him.”

“Really? How long does he generally take to show up again?”

Ye Feng did not give up, since the Oushi Antique Store was that shop which was frequently contacted by that tomb raider, in that case, someday he would certainly appear again.

“It can’t be said precisely, however sometimes it takes a period of half a month for him to appear again, and sometimes for several years we don’t even see his shadow

Ou B strangely asked: “Small Bee, why do you want to go to that place, although you can choose ‘martial arts’ as a good excuse to escape my question, but the tomb is that kind of place where not a single specialized professional has come out alive. If you are trying to make money, you don’t need to risk your life, right? ”

“If he appears again, be sure to inform me, thanks.”

Ye Feng did not explain anything. Regarding this Su Feiying's shadow matter, it was just like Ye Feng's case, his identity as a cultivator shouldn't be known by anybody. Similarly, Su Feiying's shadow case was exactly the same, so this thing could only be better put off.

He was completely drawn in his own thoughts, he barely just hung up the phone, while on the other side, Su Menghan was very nervous seeing him like this, she anxiously asked: “Ye Feng, are you going somewhere?”

Ye Feng turned his head and saw that her innocent face had a touch of worry, he couldn't help but smile and pat on her shoulder: “No. Come on, I'll accompany you to the Jinghua Grand Hotel, let's see what he has to say.”

“We are going together?”

Su Menghan was a bit surprised.

“Of course, let's go.”

Ye Feng sent a short message to the young guy, Zhao Yibei, of Heavenly Serpent Gang, making him to come and pick them up. Since he had got a free driver, that didn't mean he had to use him in vain. However, the Jinghua Grand Hotel was such kind of place where the BMW seven series couldn't be considered as a high-profile thing.

“Oh.”

Su Menghan nodded politely, as she knew that Ye Feng was afraid of her running into any kind of accident again, so he was willing to go with her. This thought deeply touched her heart.

Ye Feng smiled, he then held her soft hand and pulled her out of the door.

Since this Xiaohua had become very interesting to him, and at the same time he had also started liking this little girl, so from now on, the other people would be like his rival, who couldn't take her away from him. Those who would try to hurt her, had to think over once again that, could they deal with the so-called hurdle, Ye Feng first?

Su Menghan was holding his hand, suddenly her heart started beating faster and her face slightly turned reddish.

The dream she had seen on the train, was it going to come true? She could not help but recall the violent kick by that beautiful woman, Long Wan'er, she then thought to herself that it would not come true, right? She then shook her head and made a firm decision. If she had chosen to believe in Ye Feng, then she should not suspect him. But if he dared to lie to her.....

After some time the ice silver colored BMW Car arrived outside the Qingfeng Park district, and got parked in the roadside, the driver was the one called Zhao Yibei, that young guy from the previous time.

Zhao Yibei became indescribably excited seeing Ye Feng and Su Menghan coming out together by holding hands of each other.

Sure enough, it was right, she was really jealous! Didn't this explanation become reconciled? That Young guy felt that, his explanation greatly helped Ye Feng quite sooner, and suddenly he started bursting with a sense of accomplishment.

.....

Jinghua Grand Hotel, was one of the top rated hotels in Yanjing city, and it was located in the center position of the city.

This place didn't belong to the sphere of influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang, however this was the place where all the powerful dignitaries of Yanjing city used to gather, it was not such kind of place which could be controlled by a trivial criminal gang.

But at this time in Jinghua Grand Hotel, the entire floor had been wrapped, certainly it was not Su Xinchang who could make this magnificent feat, since he was just an ordinary chairman. but it was the influence of the Yanjing first Clan, Lin!

Lin Clan's Old Man, Lin Hongchuan's 70th birthday was today, so they specially arranged a feast here to entertain all the influential official public figure from around the country. The hotel's underground parking lot had already been full of all kinds of luxury cars and was fully occupied in all directions.

Su Xinchang drove his car and arrived in front of the gate of Jinghua Grand Hotel, however after seeing a huge crowd of all the rich and powerful figure of the city on the road, he wrinkled his eyebrows, it

seemed like tonight he had no option left than to ask his daughter to have dinner in Jincheng restaurant which was on the opposite side of Jinghua Grand Hotel .

Jincheng restaurant, in terms of expense, was kind of a very cheap restaurant in comparison to Jinghua Grand Hotel, moreover the standard of this restaurant was also quite low. This was the first time Su Xinchang asked his daughter for dinner alone, so he wasn't feeling well deep inside his heart since he was facing such kind of situation, but he didn't have any other means.

Whole restaurant was already booked by the Lin Clan for their private use. However, originally Su Xinchang had already made a plan to book the Jinghua Grand Hotel for the meeting purpose.

“That kid Ye Feng, he is also supposed to be coming together with her. When the time comes, I must strike well, I have already done a little investigation regarding the relationship between that kid and Heavenly Serpent Gang. If everything goes well, then I would be able to make them cooperate with each other.”

Su Xinchang thought to himself, he drove to the Jincheng restaurant's parking lot.

He was thinking a way as how to make Ye Feng ready for cooperation, of course, he had already decided to suggest an engagement proposal for Su Menghan and Ye Feng, as a result of this, he could be able to also stabilize his relationship with Heavenly Serpent Gang.

As for today, he had thought that he would try to convince and make Su

Menghan understand that without Xie Clan, how would she lead a steady and secured life? Therefore, the relationship with Xie Clan was necessary to be firmly maintained.

He entered Jincheng restaurant, booked a room, and then gave a call to Su Menghan to notify her about the sudden change of meeting location.

At this time, Ye Feng and Su Menghan were brought by Zhao Yibei all the way to that Jinghua Grand Hotel, they saw that in front of the hotel there was a huge number of people and a heavy traffic as well.

While at the same time, Su Menghan happened to pick up the phone call of him coincidentally and then she came to know that the meeting place had been changed. This left Ye Feng a bit puzzled, so he asked directly: “Zhao Yibei, what’s going on over there in Jinghua Grand Hotel?”

Zhao Yibei was one of the trusted subordinates of the Scarred face man, in addition to this he also had a very good idea about the other upper-class families of Yanjing city including Yanjing’s Lin Clan, he smiled and said: “I have heard that it is 70th birthday today of Yanjing Lin Clan’s Old Man, that is why they have done a grand reservation of all seats for this occasion. Hence, if someone encounters this kind of situation, then he can’t do anything except changing the place only.”

Yanjing’s Lin Clan? 70th birthday of Lin Hongchuan?

Ye Feng did not think that such a coincidence would actually happen, it was truly quite unexpected.

Chapter 047 - Extreme Drinking Capacity?

When the car stopped in front of Jincheng restaurant, both Ye Feng and Su Menghan got out of the car.

However, there was nothing intimate between them, because as per the opinion of Su Menghan, they were just high school students at present, they had not formally associated with each other yet. So, they must wait till the college

Meanwhile, Zhao Yibei was looking for a place to park the car, he had refused the invitation of Su Menghan to accompany them to eat meal together. Being the trusted subordinate of Scarred Face Man, Zhao Yibei obviously knew quite well when he should submit and when he should retreat.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan both of them entered the restaurant together, and moved towards the room which was booked by Su Xinchang. On the opposite side of this restaurant, there was Lin Clan in Jinghua Grand Hotel, but Ye Feng was not a bit inclined to pay attention towards them.

However, he wasn't aware of the fact that at this time at the entrance of the Jinghua Grand Hotel, a group of people got out to welcome the host who invited them all for tonight's feast, and that was Lin Clan's Old Man, a 70-year-old Lin Hongchuan who finally arrived at the hotel's entrance!

Although Old Man was quite old, but he was full of energy, not even a few white hair could be seen, also he seemed to have a very strong built.

He greeted the crowd while getting out of his car, but suddenly his eyes fell towards the opposite side of the road, he saw across the street Ye Feng and Su Menghan got off the car together and entered Jingchen restaurant.

He could not help but squinted his eyes and thought, wasn't he that Old Man, Ye's grandson? How was he together with other girl at the same place?

Looking around and listening to a large group of surrounding people who were blessing him, it was like impossible for him to go and look for Ye Feng at this time, but he saved this matter in his mind and decided that if he got time even for a while, he would go to the opposite side to ask Ye Feng to have a talk with him. Although, he had not seen Ye Feng officially yet, but he saw him today coincidentally on this auspicious day.

This time on his seventieth birthday, his grandson, Lin Xiuwen, who already knew his grandfather was very fond of antiques, used all his means to gather up some good antiques for him as a birthday present. Finally today, he presented them to his grandfather, which made him very happy, this good-for-nothing grandson finally managed to do something properly.

If it was said that Lin Clan's Old Man was the most powerful and influential man in the country, then it wouldn't be an exaggeration. On the eve of his 70th birthday, many powerful officials accepted the invitation to come and congratulate him, which was just one aspect of the story, while the other aspect was they generally wanted to maintain a good relationship with Lin Clan and also with the other powerful officials who took part in this grand feast. It could be said that all the powerful figures were here for their mutual benefit.

Tonight, it was destined that a lot of contract agreements would be signed off secretly in this banquet hall, the influence of which would determine the direction of certain sectors of the economy as a whole.

A group of people were around the Lin's Old Man, they all entered Jinghua Grand Hotel along with him, where they received a very warm applause.

.....

On the other side, under the leadership of the beautiful waitress, Ye Feng and Su Menghan arrived quickly at the sixth floor in Jingchen restaurant. The corridors and hall were resplendent in gold and jade green, the look was like a very high-end places. Such a classy decoration and interior, but still it couldn't be compared to the standard of Jinghua Grand Hotel which was at the opposite side of the road.

“Both of you, please come this side.”

That beautiful waitress came in front of the door of a big room and opened the door for them.

Ye Feng nodded and walked in the room first, Su Menghan followed after him, one after another both of them entered the room. It was a huge room where 10 people could easily sit, but actually there was only one person, Su Xinchang, who was sitting there alone waiting for them. The table was full of expensive dishes all prepared, in addition there was two bottles of red wine, which was revealing a seductive halo.

“Menghan, Little Feng, come, sit down.”

As soon as Su Xinchang saw the two of them entering through the door, he smiled immediately, and got up to greet them by stacking a smiling face.

He had swayed back and forth for many years in the market, he had a great social experience, when any situation came up , he used to understand already at an earlier time that what measure he should take. The red wine was certainly prepared for Ye Feng, in this country if the liquor was kept on the dining table, it was meant to drink more and discuss all the matters conveniently. It was like an everlasting truth.

From the door, Ye Feng looked around and noticed that Su Xinchang had occupied the main seat of this private room, while the dishes were placed on both left and right sides of him, it seemed just by judging the table that he already had guessed Ye Feng would certainly come together with her. Also it appeared like he wanted Ye Feng and Su Menghan to sit in his two sides respectively, which could pull the relationship closer.

However, Su Menghan might not want to sit next to Su Xinchang, and the same might go with Ye Feng.

Ye Feng walked up straight and sat down exactly on the opposite side of Su Xinchang all of a sudden, but he did not look at him. Su Menghan saw that Ye Feng didn't follow the instruction of her father, so she as well went directly towards Ye Feng and sat beside him.

When that Beautiful Waitress noticed this, she felt a little awkward.

She come up and very politely said: " both of you people, since it is a family dinner, would not it be better to sit closer? The cutlery is already ready, if you need refreshments"

That waitress knew the special identity of Su Xinchang, because he owned a Gold card of this restaurant, so she must invite his daughter along with her boyfriend to have a meal.

In the opinion of Waitress, this young fellow was too mound of earth, he came for this meeting in the casual sportswear, didn't even look at the position of tableware, moreover he chose to sit opposite to his future father-in-law unexpectedly! Then, he was aiming for his daughter, it seemed like a beggar was dreaming for a princess?

"No thanks, we will sit here."

Ye Feng faintly said that and interrupted the persuasion of waitress. Certainly, he would not sit close to Su Xinchang, since he came here just to take a look at what the other party had to say.

"Just listen to him now."

Su Xinchang felt a little unhappy in his heart, but still he kept a smile on his face and nodded to the waitress.

But all these things were making the waitress a bit confused, did Mr. Su admire this guy? Ofcourse, she could only listen to the words of Su Xinchang, so she started transferring the two tableware gracefully in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan.

“Open the red wine, after that you can leave.”

Su Xinchang said to the waitress.

“Alright, I will be standing at the door, Mr. Su, you can call me any time.”

The waitress opened the bottle and then bowed and went out of the door, however before going out she glanced at Su Menghan out of jealousy. Needless to say that in reality, Su Menghan was already very pretty and pure which was quite enviable. Let alone that she was the daughter of Su Sheng Group's chairman and had this sort of great family background, there were a lot of people who were envious of her because of both matters.

Actually nobody knew that Su Menghan didn't like this status, even more she wouldn't consider this as the honor.

Waitress finally came out and stood outside the door, she looked at Ye Feng and then closed the door, she thought to herself that this guy as well didn't know anything about luck. Unexpectedly he won the favor of the daughter of Su Sheng group's chairman. If he could really become something in his life, then in the future he would definitely start his first career which would be pretty higher than a large portion of the average people.

While Ye Feng Sitting in the private room would certainly not guess that something was going on currently in the waitress's mind.

This time Su Xinchang picked up the bottle, and poured the red wine in the glasses of Ye Feng and Su Menghan respectively, and with a soft smile: “Menghan, Little Feng, the things that happened during the day, I hope you guys won’t mind, it was just I was making it all look like this in front of the mother Tigress, how couldn’t I recognize my own daughter? Moreover, Menghan is so beautiful

“Is that so? Then do you even know how sad she was in the afternoon?”

Ye Feng said so while faintly looking at the glass of red wine, the dense color of wine was revealing a fascinating glory, which was considered as the top class thing in the world, it was representing the symbol of luxury, and high-end Western style.

“Menghan, father has to apologize to you, okay? Come, have this glass of wine, even if I am your father, still I apologize to you.”

Su Xinchang smiled gently, he then carried the wine glasses, and offered them.

Su Menghan looked at the glass of red wine, and turned her face to look at Ye Feng with a bit of hesitation.

“Girls need not to drink, that’s why I have come.”

Ye Feng smiled and pressed down the hand of Su Menghan from the glass, he took his own glass and tossed it down in his mouth and in just one gulp he finished the whole glass. When the expensive wine flowed in

the throat of Ye Feng, he could not help but frown. For him, this was the first time, he was really not used to such kind of thing, it was a bit difficult for him to drink.

Su Xinchang looked at the facial expression of Ye feng and thought that he had a great capacity for alcohol, this thought brought a feeling of proud and self satisfaction in his heart, as he had a feeling that now he could have a proper conversation with him more conveniently for a while.

Chapter 048 - Angry Su Menghan

Su Menghan looked at the side of Ye Feng and with a touch of concern she asked: "You ok?"

"Ofcourse I am all ok, relax."

He smiled gently, nodded his head and sat down, he then raised his head to look at Su Xinchang sitting opposite to him and said: "Well, now we can talk properly, so what do you want exactly?"

When Su Xinchang saw him being so direct, he didn't feel good in his heart and became a bit unhappy. He thought that he was really a young child who didn't understand the custom. He didn't know what matter should be discussed on the liquor table, he shouldn't be so quick and so direct.

Now, it should be the perfect time to exploit one's connections! Su Xinchang couldn't believe that why Ye Feng was not the least interested to have any connection with Su Sheng Group? it was like, if Ye Feng and his daughter would really become one, then in future wouldn't it be like he would automatically become eligible to get most of the share of Su Sheng Group?

Too young!

Su Xinchang thought to himself, however, this young child would be much easier to deal with on the contrary.

He gently smiled: “Little Feng, there is a plenty of time, we don’t need to worry about it. Come on, let’s celebrate our first meeting, and then have another glass of wine!”

Ye Feng snorted loudly: “You don’t need to try to get close, since this is of no use to me, if you have anything to say then be on the line, otherwise if you don’t come to the point, I will immediately leave.”

Su Xinchang’s face turned stiff, really he did not expect that he didn’t know the difference between good and evil!

However, he managed to take care of the train of thoughts running in his mind, he was also feeling pity just by thinking that Ye Feng didn’t drink, he failed to make an appropriate atmosphere for this purpose. Anyway, he did not have to pay attention to Ye Feng anymore, he sat down, looked at him with great interest and then by raising his chin he said: “If so, then I won’t beat around the bush, I have heard you are the cousin of Scarred Face Man, isn’t it true? ”

“So what?”

Ye Feng saw the attitude of the opposite party and a feeling of disdain grew in his heart, he didn’t even have the desire left to reply to the opposite party.

Su Menghan was silently watching everything from one side and was feeling very disappointed in her heart. She thought earlier that Su Xinchang heard the voice of his little conscience, that was why he invited her to dinner to make up for the father-daughter relationship. However,

who knew it was Ye Feng's back influence.

“Don't you think we can cooperate with each other?”

Su Xinchang looked very confident while saying so, with a smile he continued: “Since Menghan and you are already living together, it would better to look for a day to get you two engaged in order to determine the relationship. In this way, in future you will also get a part in the shares of Su Sheng Group.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Then, later Su Sheng Group has nothing to do, or you can make Heavenly Serpent Gang to help you out? That's a good idea, but shouldn't you ask the opinion of your daughter?”

Such arbitrarily he wanted to make his daughter to get engaged with Ye Feng, in this Su Xinchang could be really considered as a high ranking personnel who considered Su Menghan entirely as a tradable commodity.

Su Xinchang listened to him and then turned his head to look into her eyes and it seemed that she didn't care.

He said lightly: “Regarding this matter, I believe that Menghan will not reject it, after all she also likes you

“I refuse.”

Su Menghan completely disappointed Su Xinchang, she stood up and with tearful eyes stared at him: “It's true I like Ye Feng, but does liking someone is equal to engagement, tell me father, I am not that simple.”

This statement of Su Menghan left Su Xinchang and Ye Feng stunned for a moment.

Su Menghan's body was trembling slightly, apparently, she stood up and said those words even though she was extremely nervous, but now she was also a little worried that Ye Feng would be angry with her.

Liking someone was not equal to becoming engaged. In other words, she had a good impression of Ye Feng in her heart and she wanted to attempt to associate with him, that was all. However, this favorable impression was far less than the degree of love. In that case, engagement, marriage, and so on were still very early now. Being good was not equal to simple, being good didn't mean being silly. Just a trip to Langfang had developed her feelings for him, but that was still far from being so firm.

Whatever she said perhaps it might make Ye Feng uncomfortable, but she stated the truth by pushing her luck, because it was really very difficult for her to bear the attitude of Su Xinchang.

Ye Feng had already guessed what was going on in her mind, so he softly said: "Relax, I am not angry."

He then held her hand.

His words made her very emotional, she angrily sat down and didn't loosen his hand, instead she tightened her grip.

Under Ye Feng's comfort, she gradually calmed down and continued

saying: ” Regarding grandmother’s car accident, Su Xinchang, don’t you have anything to say?”

After done saying, she coldly stared at Su Xinchang, as if she was looking at her personal enemy, rather than her father. She took out a bank card from the bag and threw it directly in front of him. It was apparent that she did not need the one million of him.

The words she said suddenly reminded Ye Feng of that middle-aged young woman, Xie Min of Xie Clan. Could it be that she was really very sly? The way she spoke with them, it was quite obvious that woman was truly very narrow-minded, moreover since she had married to Su Xinchang, would she try to control his life on the ground of this marriage?

Angry Su Menghan said a series of words which left Su Xinchang speechless.

Before coming to the meeting, he had considered a very wide range of possibilities that might happen, but did not think it would turn like this. Actually he was not a bit concerned about Su Menghan’s action of throwing 1 million bankcard in front of him, rather he was concerned about this, that the entire photograph was dispirited one after another.

As a successful public figure who had experienced lots of ups and downs in his life for a long time, although unexpectedly he got caught off guard, but he must know how to tackle this situation, since there was an Assassin’s mace opposite to him!

“Waitress, give me a few bottles of Erguotou.” (Erguotou – white liquor)

It seemed like probably Su Xinchang had lost the strength of his whole body, he shouted towards the door, unexpectedly he must drink the Erguotou. In front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan, it seemed as if a young successful business man had turned into dozens of years old all of a sudden.

Ye Feng thought to himself that it was not good, since the other party was actually trying to act as a very poor and pitiful person, he was planning to play emotionally with Su Menghan's goodness and kindness, might be she would be swindled by him again.

But God had eyes, Su Xinchang's sinister plan did not succeed.

When the beautiful waitress who was standing outside, opened the door and came inside the room carrying three bottles of ergotou, just then a person who was passing through there, suddenly saw Su Xinchang together with Ye Feng and other third people in that private room, he stopped there and couldn't help but was astonished.

"Oh, isn't this Brother Su, how come you get a free time for this dinner?"

From outside the room that man said with a smile, as he walked into the room, it seemed like he was very familiar with Su Xinchang.

Ye Feng turned around to look back and immediately recognized him. This guy was that potbellied guy, the way he was smiling, wasn't he Chief Liu from the last time at the police station?

By the way, he was the one who used to support Heavenly Serpent Gang from backstage, Liu Lihui, the Chief of the Public security Northwest Sub-bureau. Actually, he didn't expect to see him here today.

Su Menghan looked at the opposite party and thought that he was also one of the evil associates of her father Su Xinchang, so, a look of disgust appeared on her face.

“This Chief Liu, what happened, are you also here to eat?”

Su Xinchang just wanted to play a desperate measure, however, he didn't have thought that in the middle of their discussion Chief Liu would appear out of nowhere, he was secretly thinking through this.

“Ha ha, just came out of a toilet, I did not expect to run into you, brother.”

Liu Lihui smiled and then that potbellied sat down. He sat in a very good position which was in the middle of Su Xinchang and Ye Feng, but was kind of more closer to the seat of Ye Feng, which was only separated by two positions.

Su Xinchang was a bit alarmed, what was wrong, was Liu Lihui trying to curry favor with Ye Feng?

“Hey, Little Ye, ah, so you are with your girlfriend to take a stroll?”

After sitting down, Liu Lihui no longer paid attention to Su Xinchang, rather with a smile on his face he was looking towards Ye Feng, there was a touch of flattery with the respectful appearance on his face.

Seeing him like this, Su Xinchang and Su Menghan simultaneously felt lifeless and sluggish, what kind of situation was this?

Chapter 049 - Xie Clan's People Arrive

Although Liu Lihui, the chief of Northwest Public Security Sub-Bureau, was not a high-level official in Yanjing, but still he held a great power.

Even Su Xinchang's social status was almost the same as Liu Lihui's, which could be easily seen in Liu Lihui's strength. But holding this kind of real power, still addressing Ye Feng as 'Little Ye'?

Seeing this, Su Xinchang became very anxious deep inside his heart, Ye Feng had just the identity of being the cousin of Heavenly Serpent Gang, still that was not sufficient to let him become a "Shao", right? Could it be that this kid was having some other extraordinary background? (Shao – Little).

"Well....."

Ye Feng nodded, looked at the potbellied middle-aged man and thought to himself that the last time at the police station, who exactly was that person who telephoned him and made him so terrified?

He should be the person of Lin Clan, however, whatever Ye Feng thought might be just a possibility.

"Oh, by the way, who was that man who gave you the order to search for those three grass?"

Ye Feng asked this question since he was curious to know that was

there any influence of Long Wan'er in this secular metropolis of the city.

“Yes, he is Chief Miao.”

As soon as Liu Lihui heard the question of Ye Feng, he started cold sweating, promptly he put up the name of his immediate superior. He was not a bit interested in getting involved in this fight.

“Chief Miao?”

Ye Feng frowned.

While they were having a conversation, Su Xinchang was constantly listening to them, he was being a bit fuzzy though, but the moment he heard the name “Chief Miao” he was totally startled by it.

Liu Lihui was merely the Chief of Northwest Public Security sub-bureau, but wasn't this Chief Miao just the Chief of Yanjing public security headquarters? He was also the member of sub-provincial level municipal party committee, everywhere in Yanjing city, people used to talk about him , he was regarded as a high level official!

Seeing Ye Feng didn't seem to clearly understand the identity of Chief Miao, Su Menghan went close to him and in a low voice she softly said: “He should be the Chief of Yanjing public security headquarters, Miao Zhenjiang, I often see him on the news channel and also in the newspaper.”

“Ok.”

Ye Feng listened to her presentation, smiled and nodded his head, he thought that this little girl knew quite a lot. This time he really wanted to hug her and give her a kiss, unfortunately the situation was inappropriate, what a pity.

Miao Zhenqiang, but Dragon Clan had any influence in the secular Metropolis?

Ye Feng fiddled with the glass of wine in his hand, and sneered secretly in his heart, it should be better not to annoy him again, otherwise depending on his method, the opposite party certainly didn't have the auspicious day today, simply the next step of Ye Feng would be, he would behead the other party altogether, once and for all.

When Su Xinchang saw Ye Feng sneering, he started getting panicked more and more in his heart. As from the aura of Ye Feng it appeared like, didn't he even pay a slightest attention to Miao Zhenqiang?

Liu Lihui didn't dare to continue too long on this topic, so he wanted to change the subject to avoid it. He knew that at the moment, on the opposite side, a grand feast was being held by Yanjing's Lin Clan for the celebration of the 70th birthday of Lin Clan's Old Man. If this Ye Feng didn't have any relationship with Lin Clan, then how couldn't he go?

Just when he was planning to make a veiled attack, immediately then the door of that private room burst open by someone "bang", a group of people flushed in a threatening manner!

Including Su Xinchang, all the people present there were suddenly got

frightened and shocked, Ye Feng frowned and immediately turned his head to look back and what he actually saw was a line of 5 or 6 people headed by Xie Min were looking at Su Xinchang constantly with an extremely angry expression.

“Su Xinchang, do you have to say anything?”

The air around Xie Min was making it feel like quite sooner she was going to make an unreasonable scene, she came in and instantly pointed her finger at Su Xinchang and in an scolding manner, she shouted: “so late, and what you said that you were going to discuss a business meeting, as a result of it, well it feels like you are still thinking about your daughter, right? Very good. We’re divorced now!”

Behind her there was a man who was also from Xie Clan, he was one of the most dignified and commanding one. He was actually the father of Xie Min and also the main owner of Xie Clan presently. He was called ‘Xie Pinghui’.

Rest of the people were also from Xie Clan, they were both male as well as female and each and every one of them was gazing at Su Xinchang together with Su Menghan with a very ill facial expression.

When Su Xinchang saw Xie Min, he immediately understood that today’s matter was getting more and more difficult to handle, he started to have a headache, he thought that how today turned out to be such an unlucky day for him?

He immediately prepared his mind to resolve this crisis. If the current situation was not in his favor, then he would likely not think about

pleasing both sides! His mind immediately entered the state of high-speed operation to come up with another way to resolve the current situation.

Liu Lihui was watching everything from the sidelines and was thinking that the current situation was not at all favorable for him, it seemed like somehow he got involved and trapped in some kind of family quarrel. His level as compared to Xie Pinghui was far from comparison, hence he didn't have to be afraid of the opposite party. However, if it was seen from the different aspect then Liu Lihui was just a person while Xie Clan was a family as a whole!

Besides Xie Pinghui, other people of Xie Clan also held important positions in many places, moreover, they had a very strong hold over both the government as well as business. Although Xie Clan was merely a second-class family, but together they became much stronger than Liu Lihui as one person alone.

“Xinchang, I trusted you in vain, hadn't thought that you would deceive my daughter like this unexpectedly.”

Xie Pinghui walked towards Su Xinchang and with a very disappointed look on his face, he looked at him and arrived at his side to take a seat. He then looked at Liu Lihui and slightly nodded his head as a signal to greet him. Since Liu Lihui was such a real powerful figure, Xie Pinghui didn't need to offend him in any way, however he tried throwing him a hint to remind him that this was Xie Clan's matter and they didn't want outsiders blending in it.

If it were an ordinary time, Liu Lihui, seeing all these things, would have already thought to leave this place as he knew his limitation.

However now, he decided to rush into danger and take the risk of a stroke!

By putting on a fake smile on his face he also greeted Xie Pinghui, and then he moved towards the position of Ye Feng and sat at the side of him directly. He did that just to express two points, first -he wouldn't get involved in this matter of Su Xinchang and Xie Clan, and second, with this he tried to convey his message to the opposite party without using his words that, they could do whatever they want but dare not to cause any trouble to Ye Feng.

It was crystal clear that Xie Pinghui understood what Liu Lihui tried to convey, so he smiled and nodded to him. But unfortunately Xie Min was such a feeble minded person, she didn't care about others. Seeing Su Menghan, she lost her calm and her blood started boiling, from behind the people she rushed and arrived at the side of Su Menghan.

“Bitch, offer your seat to somebody, don't you know how to respect the elder?”

Full of arrogance and condescension, Xie Min said that to Su Menghan with a superior tone.

Bang!

Ye Feng stood up and slapped her directly across her face, and said coldly: “I advise you to speak in a respectful manner!”

Half of the face of Xie Min turned red instantly, she didn't dare to

believe what happened just now, she immediately covered her face and with her finger she pointed at Ye Feng, although her finger was trembling but she said in attitude: “You, how dare you hit me!”

This scene suddenly gave a power shock to all the people present there, Ye Feng’s sudden slap mummified them all. In addition to Xie Pinghui and the other members of Xie Clan, Su Xinchang also didn’t expect Ye Feng would actually hit her so easily like this! And on top of that, wasn’t he afraid to offend Xie Clan?

Even if Liu Lihui was there to support him, still this boy was totally not at all capable enough to offend Xie Clan! He had a connection with Heavenly Serpent Gang, who was just a bunch of gangsters, that was all, then how could he use the power.

Only Su Menghan was used to see this Ye Feng’s ferocious side, actually she was somewhat worried.

Liu Lihui from one side, was taking pleasure in others’ misfortunes, He thought that Xie Clan offended Little Ye, must be they were lucky today. Certainly, he was not a fool that he would go and remind the opposite party about Ye Feng’s background, since if by any chance Little Ye planned to play the role of the pig to eat the tiger, a type of pretentious bastard to step on the human?

Xie Min went behind a tall youth wearing a military uniform, about 27-28 year old by his appearance. This sudden incident immediately turned on his anger and he stood up and strode towards Ye Feng! He came out to be the younger brother of Xie Min, called Xie Chengye, he grew by Xie Clan as to develop him into a key figure in the military, but at present he was only a deputy major of a battalion, his development was not upto the

expectation.

“Boy, have not your family members taught you that in outsiders interact with each other, you must not be too rampant?”

Although his military rank was not very high, but his determination was more than enough to deal with Ye Feng, this sort of organized crime relative, hence, he stood up and threw a powerful slap across the face of Ye Feng quite heavily. Dare to hit his elder sister, didn't this boy want to live patiently?

When Xie Min saw her brother slapped him, a touch of happiness suddenly flashed on her face, it seemed as if she finally saw the swollen face of Ye Feng. Her younger brother, from his childhood to till now had been helping her out several times, moreover, he also didn't know the difference between the good and the evil, anyone who tried to offend his elder sister and younger brother, never had the good end!

Chapter 050 - The Wrath Of Scarred Face Man

The young soldier, Xie Chengye, was staring in anger, everyone from Xie Clan were already anticipating that something bad was going to happen soon, and suddenly a slap was thrown towards Ye Feng!

Bang!

Another clear sound, but the situation was different from what was imagined by people.

In anger, Ye Feng flung his arm to grab Xie Chengye and slapped him hardly across his face, as a result of it, he flew all the way to the wall and bump against the luxurious decoration on the walls quite heavily. Suddenly, fresh blood gushed out from the corner of his mouth!

This scene, once again left a very powerful shock on everyone's mind who were present in that private room, they were all got frozen to the spot. Besides, when that beautiful waitress saw the series of violent incident taking place one after another, she panicked and quickly ran out of the room all prepared to report to the manager of the hotel.

“Chengye, are you alright?”

Xie Min promptly moved towards her younger brother to give him support, a flashing anger with a touch of surprise could be seen very clearly on her face, this boy dared to hit her younger brother including her was really unexpected, really he overturned the heaven!

Xie Pinghui, seeing this now could not sit still, he stood up and loudly shouted: “Stop!”

“Why, do you also want to get thrashed?”

Ye Feng tilted his head at his side to gaze at him, and very indifferently he fired that question on him.

“You.....”

Xie Pinghui’s entire body started shaking with anger: “You are called Ye Feng, ain’t you? how can you be so uneducated and uncultured?”

“Ha ha, you are talking to me about education and upbringing?”

Ye Feng glanced at the side of Xie Min: “First take care of your daughter properly, then talk about it.”

Xie Pinghui listened to him and felt speechless suddenly. Indeed, just a moment ago, wasn’t Xie Min opened her mouth earlier to say “Bitch”? Seeing his own girlfriend was being abused like this by others, it was very normal for Ye Feng as a man to lose his calm.

Just now, who were got beaten up by Ye Feng were Xie Pinghui’s son and daughter, it was impossible for him to stand on the side of Ye Feng. While making a stuffy groan, he said: “That’s also not the way to hit people out of nowhere using your hands and fists. You apologize to my

daughter, and I assure you that we will surely write off this beating incident.”

Very frankly he said to Ye Feng that he surely would write off this incident of hitting Xie Min, however, he didn't say that hitting Xie Chengye would be written off as well, obviously this Xie Pinghui was also an old crafty fox. Firstly, he was trying to make Ye Feng apologize to his daughter to save his face, and then he would use his son as an excuse to teach a lesson to Ye Feng, indeed such a sinister old man!

“Ye Feng

Su Menghan saw him angrily hitting people around for her, she felt her heart had intertwined with him, she tugged at his sleeves.

With full of emotions, she saw that Xie Min was hit by him and because of that there was a very flustered and defeated look on her face. Su Menghan was a very pure and honest girl from inside her heart, after all she had been oppressed by the opposite party for more than 10 years in a row. Especially during her young age, she was got beaten up by Xie Min not only one or two times, instead several times.

But intellectually speaking, she did not want to see Ye Feng doing so. Although he had a complete support of Heavenly Serpent Gang , but still as compared to Xie Clan, he didn't have an absolute advantage, even if he was the young cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but hitting someone from Xie Clan certainly would be very troublesome. Besides, leaving this aside, she had always been personally in favor of a peaceful solution to any problem.

Rest other people of Xie Clan including men and women saw that even Xie Chengye was got beaten up badly by Ye Feng, so no one dared to come forward against him since they all were timid in a way. Originally, they had come over here to cheer Xie Min up for “justice”, but they didn’t know anything about Ye Feng, therefore, in order to not to get into any trouble, they fixated their sights on Xie Pinghui and relied completely on him.

Xie Pinghui stood up on the side, looked at Xie Chengye with a very shady and hidden complexion and nodded to him, then he turned around to pour his gaze at Ye Feng and said: “what happened? For the sake of so-called man’s honor, you are finally refusing to apologize for your action?”

In his opinion, although Ye Feng had the support of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but eventually he was merely a high-school student, so it was not difficult for them to make him admit his defeat.

But contrary to his expectation, Ye Feng was not a bit inclined to apologize to her.

“Just look at the face of Menghan, so I can’t be held accountable for this matter.”

Ye Feng didn’t pay attention to rest of the people who were covetously watching him from one side, he sat down and said slowly: “Anyway, since we are here, why don’t you just give me an explanation about how did Menghan’s grandmother encounter a car accident?”

“What car accident?”

Xie Pinghui snorted coldly.

“Right, what car accident, how are we involved in this matter, why do we have to give an explanation?”

Xie Min became a little worried, with an upward movement she replied to Ye Feng and tried to totally deny this blame, simultaneously, with all her might she gave signal to Xie Chengye by using her eyes. Xie Chengye quickly understood the hidden meaning behind that signal, with a shady facial expression he nodded to her as well and then he immediately pulled out his cellphone and sent a text message.

“Is that so? Since you have totally refused to admit this, I won’t force you then.”

Ye Feng smirked and looked towards Su Xinchang and Xie Pinghui who were sitting together, then he turned his vision towards Su Menghan, held her hand and pulled her to get up, since he wanted to leave now.

There was no point in staying there anymore. About the car accident, Ye Feng could definitely make use of Heavenly Serpent Gang to investigate into this matter, as he had a firm believe that they would certainly find any clue.

“Stop right there, after hitting people, now you want to walk away from here, that’s not so easy!”

Xie Chengye with half of his face red, suddenly saw them departing, he immediately stepped forward, stared at them angrily and stopped them at the door.

Ye Feng still holding Su Menghan's hand, looked around and glanced at Xie Min : "That's quite easy to handle, let her apologize to Menghan, then in return I will apologize to her as well!"

"Little brat, just dream on! You dare to hit the active duty military personnel, you just wait for your death!"

Xie Min Poohed a little and didn't pay attention at all to Ye Feng, presently the only thing she was itching to do was she wanted to take hold of Ye Feng and hit him personally by her own hands, so, how possibly she could apologize?

"Then get out of the way, don't waste the time of everybody. If you have any contradiction with Su Xinchang, then you have to resolve it by your own."

Ye Feng arrived in front of Xie Chengye and looked directly into his eyes without paying the slightest attention to the status of opposite party.

"Clear my way."

Xie Chengye touched the fresh blood coming out from the corner of his mouth, contemptuously he looked at Ye Feng: "Now that even you want to apologize, you must look that whether I am willing to accept or not."

He barely said his words and at the same time a group of men rushed out of the elevator of corridor, from their footsteps and clothing, it was quite clear that they were soldiers unexpectedly!

“Xie elder brother, what’s the matter!”

That group of people flushed in a threatening manner and caused a chaotic situation in the entire corridor. There were other customers as well who wanted to go to the bathroom, but seeing such a turmoil they stepped back and didn’t dare to approach near the corridor.

In fraction of seconds, seven or eight youth wearing the military uniform gathered around the door of that private room to block the way of Ye Feng. They were below Xie Chengye on the basis of ranking, they were under commander of platoon leader, usually they were mixed together to commensurate with the brothers.

Su Menghan was a little nervous: “Ye Feng.....

“Rest assured, I won’t have anything to do in this matter.”

Ye Feng patted on her shoulder to comfort her a little, he then looked up to see the other side who was also glaring at them by narrowing his eyes.

“This.....”

Su Xinchang didn’t think the situation would turn out like this, he could not even get time to say few words, he simply looked at Xie Pinghui

since he wanted to say something to him.

“You can’t control this matter, now this thing will be handled by military people, you and I are not related.”

Xie Pinghui interrupted him, with a very calm appearance he was looking at the door where Ye Feng, along with Su Menghan, was stopped by those military people.

Xie Pinghui as well never liked the presence of Su Menghan around Su Xinchang and Xie Min, but the most important thing was Xie Min and Su Xinchang had no child till now, that was the reason why Su Menghan’s presence had become very sensitive.

It looked like this time, he would certainly be able to force Su Xinchang to abandon his owndaughter completely, right?

Since there was a support of military personnels to Xie Chengye, so his mind was at ease finally, holding calm and composed appearance, he was looking at Ye Feng: “Boy, if you have sensed your position already, then let me tell you now, if you bark like a dog three times , slap your face 100 times and finally crawl on your knees, then only I can consider to let you off, what say?”

As soon as he said that, many people in that private room suddenly gasped, since they thought that didn’t this go too far?

.....

And at this moment, on the staircase of Jingcheng restaurant, a group of menacing gang members from Heavenly Serpent Gang carrying chopper went upstairs and appeared on the floor in a threatening manner.

Scarred Face Man was angrily walking in front of them, just few minutes ago he heard from Zhao Yibei that there seemed to be a troop of soldiers looking for Ye Feng, therefore, without wasting any second he, along with his group of people, came over here directly with a killing instinct!

Hotel lobby manager remained silent and gave instruction to his man to report to the police hastily. Things had gotten bigger and complicated there, and this situation had gone far beyond the power of the hotel manager to control.

Chapters 001 - 014 Translation by:

NoviceTranslator

Chapters 015 - 050 Translation by:

Lastvoice Translator

Epub By:

Yuki (The Emperor)